RAJIV GANDHI UNIVERSITY

SECOND YEAR

PAPER-II

INEQUALITY

CULTURE

HEALTHO

BA



CLASSICAL SOCIOLOGICAL THOUGHT

OF DISTANCE EDUCATION

Rajiv Gandhi University

www.ide.rgu.ac.in

CLASSICAL SOCIOLOGICAL THOUGHT

BA Second Year Paper II



RAJIV GANDHI UNIVERSITY

Arunachal Pradesh, INDIA - 791 112

BOARD OF STUDIES					
l.	Prof. Maquitul Hussain Visiting Prof., Department of Sociology Rajiv Gandhi University	Chairman			
2.	Dr. Ramanuj Ganguly Head, Department of Sociology West Bengal State University, Barasat Kolkata, West Bengal	Member			
3.	Mr. Bikash Bage Asstt. Professor, Department of Sociology Rajiv Gandhi University, Itanagar	Member			
1.	Mr. Shashank Yadav Asstt. Professor, Department of Sociology Rajiv Gandhi University	Member			
5.	Dr. S. R. Parhi Head, Department of Sociology Rajiv Gandhi University	Member Secretary			

Authors

Dr Manoj Kumar Jena, Units: (1.3, 2, 3) © Reserved, 2017

Neeru Sood, Units: (1.4, 7) © Reserved, 2017

Dr Arvinder A. Ansari, Units: (4, 5, 6.2-6.2.1) © Dr Arvinder A. Ansari, 2017 Dr Minakshi Tripathi, Unit: (6.3-6.5) © Dr Minakshi Tripathi, 2017

Vikas Publishing House, Units: (1.0-1.2, 1.5-1.9, 6.0-6.1, 6.2.2, 6.6-6.10) © Reserved, 2017

All rights reserved. No part of this publication which is material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or transmitted or utilized or stored in any form or by any means now known or hereinafter invented, electronic, digital or mechanical, including photocopying, scanning, recording or by any information storage or retrieval system, without prior written permission from the Publisher.

"Information contained in this book has been published by Vikas Publishing House Pvt. Ltd. and has been obtained by its Authors from sources hallowed to be reliable and are correct to the best of their been obtained by its Authors from sources believed to be reliable and are correct to the best of their knowledge. However, IDE—Pails Capabit Habitanity, the sublishers and its Authors shall be in no knowledge, However, IDE—Rajiv Gandhi University, the publishers and its Authors shall be in no event be liable for any errors, omissions or damages arising out of use of this information and specifically disclaim any implied warranties and any implied warranties. specifically disclaim any implied warranties or merchantability or fitness for any particular use"



Vikas® is the registered trademark of Vikas® Publishing House Pvt. Ltd.

E-28, Sector-8, Noida - 201301 (UP)

Phone: 0120-4078900 • Fax: 0120-4078999

Regd. Office: 7361, Ravindra Mansion, Ram Nagar, New Delhi 110 055 Website: www.vikaspublishing.com
 Email: helpline@vikaspublishing.com

About the University

Rajiv Gandhi University (formerly Arunachal University) is a premier institution for higher education in the state of Arunachal Pradesh and has completed twenty-five years of its existence. Late Smt. Indira Gandhi, the then Prime Minister of India, laid the foundation stone of the university on 4th February, 1984 at Rono Hills, where the present campus is located.

Ever since its inception, the university has been trying to achieve excellence and fulfill the objectives as envisaged in the University Act. The university received academic recognition under Section 2(f) from the University Grants Commission on 28th March, 1985 and started functioning from 1st April, 1985. It got financial recognition under section 12-B of the UGC on 25th March, 1994. Since then Rajiv Gandhi University, (then Arunachal University) has carved a niche for itself in the educational scenario of the country following its selection as a University with potential for excellence by a high-level expert committee of the University Grants Commission from among universities in India.

The University was converted into a Central University with effect from 9th April, 2007 as per notification of the Ministry of Human Resource Development, Government of India.

The University is located atop Rono Hills on a picturesque tableland of 302 acres overlooking the river Dikrong. It is 6.5 km from the National Highway 52-A and 25 km from Itanagar, the State capital. The campus is linked with the National Highway by the Dikrong bridge.

The teaching and research programmes of the University are designed with a view to play a positive role in the socio-economic and cultural development of the State. The University offers Undergraduate, Postgraduate, M.Phil and Ph.D. programmes. The Department of Education also offers the B.Ed. programme.

There are fifteen colleges affiliated to the University. The University has been extending educational facilities to students from the neighbouring states, particularly Assam. The strength of students in different departments of the University and in affiliated colleges has been steadily increasing.

The faculty members have been actively engaged in research activities with financial support from UGC and other funding agencies. Since inception, a number of proposals on research projects have been sanctioned by various funding agencies to the University. Various departments have organized numerous seminars, workshops and conferences. Many faculty members have participated in national and international conferences and seminars held within the country and abroad. Eminent scholars and distinguished personalities have visited the University and delivered lectures on various disciplines.

The academic year 2000-2001 was a year of consolidation for the University. The switch over from the annual to the semester system took off smoothly and the performance of the students registered a marked improvement. Various syllabi designed by Boards of Post-graduate Studies (BPGS) have been implemented. VSAT facility installed by the ERNET India, New Delhi under the UGC-Infonet program, provides Internet

In spite of infrastructural constraints, the University has been maintaining its academic excellence. The University has strictly adhered to the academic calendar, conducted the examinations and declared the results on time. The students from the University have found placements not only in State and Central Government Services, but also in various institutions, industries and organizations. Many students have emerged successful

Since inception, the University has made significant progress in teaching, research, innovations in curriculum development and developing infrastructure.

SYLLABI-BOOK MAPPING TABLE

Classical Sociological Thought

Syllabi	Mapping in Book
UNIT 1 Emergence of Sociology: Role of French Revolution and Industrial Revolution; Intellectual Background for the Emergence of Sociology in the Western World	Unit 1: Emergence of Sociology (Pages 3-20)
UNIT 2 Comte: Positivism; Law of Three Stages and Hierarchy of Science	Unit 2: Auguste Comte (Pages 21-29)
UNIT 3 Spencer: Social Darwinism; Evolution; and Classification of Society	Unit 3: Herbert Spencer (Pages 31-38)
UNIT 4 Durkheim: Mechanical and Organic Solidarity; Social Fact; Theory of Suicide and Sociology of Religion	Unit 4: Emile Durkheim (Pages 39-61)
UNIT 5 Weber: Types of Social Action, The Protestant Ethic and Spirit of. Capitalism; Ideal Type; Power and Authority	Unit 5: Max Weber (Pages 63-85)
UNIT 6 Marx: Historical Materialism, Class Conflict and Alienation	Unit 6: Karl Marx (Pages 87-124)
UNIT 7 Pareto: Circulation of Elites, Residue and Derivations; and Logical and Non-Logical Action	Unit 7: Vilfredo Pareto (Pages 125-135)

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION			
UNIT 1 EMERGENCE OF SOCIOLOGY	3-20		
 1.0 Introduction 1.1 Unit Objectives 1.2 Role of French Revolution and Industrial Revolution 1.2.1 Impact of French Revolution on the Emergence of Sociology 1.2.2 Impact of Industrial Revolution on the Emergence of Sociology 1.3 Origin and Development of Sociology 1.4 Intellectual Background for the Emergence of Sociology in the Western World 1.4.1 The Works of Intellectual Philosophers in Sociology 1.5 Summary 			
1.6 Key Terms			
1.7 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'			
1.8 Questions and Exercises			
1.9 Further Reading			
UNIT 2 COMTE	21-29		
2.0 Introduction			
2.1 Unit Objectives			
2.2 Comte and Positivism			
2.3 Hierarchy of Sciences			
2.4 Summary			
2.5 Key Terms			
2.6 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'			
2.7 Questions and Exercises			
2.8 Further Reading			
UNIT 3 SPENCER	31-38		
 3.0 Introduction 3.1 Unit Objectives 3.2 Social Darwinism 3.3 Evolution of State 3.3.1 Organic Analogy 3.4 Summary 3.5 Key Terms 3.6 Answers to 'Check Your Progress' 3.7 Questions and Exercises 			
3.8 Further Reading			
UNIT 4 DURKHEIM	39-61		
4.0 Introduction			
4.1 Unit Objectives			

4.2 Emile Durkheim and Sociological Theories		
4.2.1 Mechanical and Organic Solidarity and Soc	cial Fact	
4.2.2 Theory of Suicide		
4.3 Sociology of Religion		(71-1)
4.4 Summary		100
4.5 Key Terms		275
4.6 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'	Aboronacs to fire	
4.7 Questions and Exercises		
4.8 Further Reading		
JNIT 5 WEBER		63-85
5.0 Introduction		05-02
5.1 Unit Objectives		1 (198)
5.2 Max Weber's Contribution to Sociological T 5.2.1 Types of Social Action	heories	3,709
5.3 Power and Authority		
5.4 The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capita		
5.4.1 Religion and Social Change	alism	- 23
5.4.2 The Religion of China		
5.4.3 The Religion of India		
5.5 Summary		
5.6 Key Terms		
5.7 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'		
5.8 Questions and Exercises		
5.9 Further Reading		
S		
UNIT 6 MARX	All Adonous in	h. 0 - 140
6.0 Introduction		87-124
6.1 Unit Objectives		
6.2 Influence of Verlag		
6.2 Influence of Karl Marx on Sociological The 6.2.1 Dialectical Materialism	eory	- 515-4
6.2.2 Historical Materialism		
6.3 Alienation and Capitalism		
6.4 Class Conflict		and o
6.5 Theory of Revolution and Other Concepts		
6.5.1 Transitional Proletarian State		
6.5.2 The Dictatorship of the Proletariat		
6.5.3 Surplus Value		
6.6 Summary		
6.7 Key Terms	Military Committee of the Committee of t	
6.8 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'		
6.9 Questions and Exercises		
6.10 Further Reading		
UNIT 7 PARETO		
7.0 Introduction		125-135
7.1 Unit Ohio.		125-1
7.1 Unit Objectives		

7.2 Life of Pareto

7.2.1 Pareto's Economic Concepts 7.2.2 Circulation of Elites

7.3 Residues and Derivations

7.4 Logical and Non-Logical Actions

7.5 Summary

7.6 Key Terms

7.7 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'

7.8 Questions and Exercises

7.9 Further Reading

INTRODUCTION

In sociology, sociological perspectives, theories or paradigms are complex, theoretical and methodological frameworks used to analyse and explain the objects of social study. They facilitate organizing sociological knowledge. Sociological theory is constantly evolving, and can never be presumed to be complete. New sociological theories build upon the work of their predecessors and add to them, but classical sociological theories are still considered important and relevant.

Whereas the field of sociology itself and sociological theory by extension is relatively new, dating to 18th and 19th centuries, it is closely tied to a much older field of social sciences (and social theory) in general. Sociology has separated itself from the other social sciences with its focus on society, a concept that goes beyond nation, and includes communities, organizations and relationships. Sociological theory is not just a collection of answers to queries about the nature and essence of society. Not only does it provide many answers, it also offers help in putting better questions and further developing research projects that can help understand complex social phenomena.

Like any other subject of science, it is always under development in response to the changing dynamics of our social lives as well as the increase in sociological knowledge. The adventure of sociological theory is comparatively new—spanning just about two centuries. However, it is very closely connected to a long history of social thought dating back to Greek philosophers, Roman lawyers, and Jewish and Christian religious scholars. This period can be termed as the prehistory of sociological theory. Their systematic way of thinking about society laid a foundation for the sociological thought capable of understanding and expressing the emerging complexities in society.

The learning material in the book is presented in a structured format so that it is easy to grasp. Each unit begins with an outline of the *Unit Objectives* followed by *Introduction* to the topic of the unit. The detailed content is then presented in simple language, interspersed with *Check Your Progress* questions to enable the student to test his understanding as and when he goes through each unit. *Summary* provided at the end of each unit helps in quick recollection. *Questions and Exercises* section is also provided for further practice.

NOTES

UNIT 1 EMERGENCE OF SOCIOLOGY

Structure

- 1.0 Introduction
- 1.1 Unit Objectives
- 1.2 Role of French Revolution and Industrial Revolution
 - 1.2.1 Impact of French Revolution on the Emergence of Sociology
 - 1.2.2 Impact of Industrial Revolution on the Emergence of Sociology
- 1.3 Origin and Development of Sociology
- 1.4 Intellectual Background for the Emergence of Sociology in the Western World
 1.4.1 The Works of Intellectual Philosophers in Sociology
- 1.5 Summary
- 1.6 Key Terms
- 1.7 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'
- 1.8 Questions and Exercises
- 1.9 Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

Sociology is the study of human social relationships and institutions. As an academic discipline, sociology is the study of the social behaviour including its origin, development and organization. Sociology basically deals with developing a body of knowledge about social order, disorder and social change. Sociology involves the study of diverse matters like crime, religion, family, state, racial divisions and cultures.

The aim of sociology is to understand how human action is affected by the surrounding social and cultural structures. At a personal level, sociology deals with love, gender identity, family conflict, ageing, religious faith and even human behaviour. At the state level, sociology deals with crime, law, social discrimination, poverty, wealth, education and social movements. At the global level, sociology studies war, peace, migration, population growth and even economic development.

1.1 UNIT OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able to:

- Analyse the role of French revaluation of Industrial Revolution
- Discuss the impact of French Revolution on emergence of sociology
- Explain the nature and scope of sociology
- Describe the impact of Industrial Revolution on emergence of sociology
- Analyse enlightenment as a major contributing factor to the development of sociology in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries

NOTES

1.2 ROLE OF FRENCH REVOLUTION AND INDUSTRIAL REVOLUTION

NOTES

Sociology as a field of study emerged in Europe in the early nineteenth century. The main subjects and tenets of sociology were based on the changes that were taking place in the European society and politics. The European society was changing because of revolution, reforms, warfare, industrialization and urbanization. The three major contributing factors to the emergence of sociology include French Revolution, Industrial Revolution and a period known as Enlightenment in the western world.

1.2.1 Impact of French Revolution on the Emergence of Sociology

The French revolution lasted for a period of ten years. The French Revolution is known to be the first modern and ideological revolution of that period. It had a great impact on the society because it changed the entire structure of the society. One of the main changes that French Revolution brought about was the elimination of social distinction between people and the feudal lords. The power for the first time shifted into the hands of people from the Church and the people were considered the citizens of the society. European society that had been running on the system of clerical hierarchy became free from the hierarchical structure and the rights and property was given to the citizens. brought about significant changes in the family because of the Declaration of Human Brought about in family related issues, education as well as religion during the French revolution.

1.2.2 Impact of Industrial Revolution on the Emergence of Sociology

The late eighteenth century and early nineteenth century also saw Industrial Revolution. The Industrial Revolution began in the late eighteenth century in England and brought about several changes in the society. In fact, Industrial Revolution shaped the society into what it is today. The revolution spread into Britain by the early nineteenth century and slowly spread across the entire world. At the end of the eighteenth century, the world population was rapidly increasing and the demand for products was growing. So, more workers were needed to meet the ever increasing demand. The work that people indulged in during this period was for different and the definition of the period was for different and the definition of the period was for different and the definition of the period was for different and the definition of the period was for different and the definition of the period was growned and the period was growned a indulged in during this period was far different from the traditional work they were used to doing. Industrial revolution also broads. to doing. Industrial revolution also brought about technological changes at the work place, introducing machines that improved the efficiency of the work force. Machines were being used by people to produce goods thus increasing time as well as production efficiency. Technological changes introduced the use of steel and iron. These changes also improved the transportation facilities and also facilitated and improved trade between countries. The Industrial Revolution led to an expansion of the markets and also ensured that goods and products were moved more first. that goods and products were moved more freely and made easily available. With Industrial Revolution, machines became the symbol and made easily available. Revolution, machines became the symbol of the new society. Industrial revolution also improved communication. People could not be new society. Industrial revolution and improved communication. People could now communicate in a fast improved manner.

Since letters were the only way of communicate in a fast improved manner. Since letters were the only way of communicate in a fast improved manufactured them quickly and at the right place. A power at the manufacture in a fast improved manufacture in a fast im them quickly and at the right place. A new method of communication called telegraph was also introduced during the eighteenth and of communication called telegraph was also introduced during the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. The changes in communication brought people and societies of communication brought people and societies closer to each other. People now shifted to The socio-political changes that were brought about by the French and the Industrial Revolutions were not totally accepted by all. There were some who blamed French Revolution for having brought about social chaos and disorder. Similarly, many attributed child labor and fast pace of life to Industrial Revolution. Many even protested against these adverse effects of these revolutions and these signs of social protests and consciousness were what formed the roots of sociology.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 1. What are the main contributing factors to the emergence of sociology?
- 2. How were changes brought into family relations by the French Revolution?
- 3. Why were machines used during and after Industrial Revolution?
- 4. Which method of communication was introduced during the Industrial Revolution?

1.3 ORIGIN AND DEVELOPMENT OF SOCIOLOGY

Sociology is a relatively new academic discipline among the social sciences, which include economics, political science, anthropology, history and psychology. The ideas behind it, however, have a long history and can trace their origins to a mixture of common human knowledge and philosophy.

Sociology emerged as a scientific discipline in the early nineteenth century, as a fundamentally new type of society based on new principles of social organization and new ideas of enlightenment. This led to a change in the mindset of people. Sociologists hoped not only to understand what held social groups together, but also to develop an antidote to the social breakdown. In terms of science, sociology pertains to social groups, their hierarchies or forms of organization. It combines functions which are inclined to maintain or modify these forms of organization and their inter-group network. Sociology is concerned with interaction itself. A social group is a system of social interaction. Sociology is interested in social relationships, not because they are economic, political, religious, legal or educational, but because they are social at the same time. Further, in sociology we do not study everything that happens in a society or under social conditions, but we study culture, social relationships, their specific forms, varieties and patterns. We study the combination of relations, how they build up smaller or greater systems and how they respond to changes and changing demands or needs.

Auguste Comte invented the term 'sociology' in the year 1838. He was a French philosopher and sociologist. Comte attempted to combine all the faculties of mankind, including history, psychology and economics. His own pattern of sociology was typical of the 19th century; he put across the theory that every man had experienced the same distinct historical stages and that the success of this progress was the solution to every social ill. Sociology would lead social sciences in future. Comte defined **sociology** as the science of social phenomena, subject to natural invariable laws, the discovery of which is the object of investigation. He advocated for sociology to be used as a positive method as in natural sciences. He further believed that social evolution went hand in hand with progress, in accordance with the law of three stages. These three stages are: the **theological**-military, the **metaphysical**-legalistic and the **positive**-industrial laws.

According to Comte's hierarchy of sciences, sociology occupies the summit. This is because it is considered to be the most complex of sciences, as it deals with humanity.

The systematic study of society gained prominence due to the upheavals caused by the French and industrial revolutions. The intellectual community of that time attempted to analyse and establish reasons for these rapid changes. So the study of sociology emerged as a distinct discipline dealing with social order and change. Although all social sciences study different aspects of social life, but the approach of sociology is distinct. It is a more detailed picture explaining why things are the way they are. Sociology has also been labelled as a 'debunking science' because a sociologist is interested in looking beyond the commonly accepted meaning of social phenomenon and understands reality as a social construction; that is how reality gets established in the way we understand it. Peter Berger argued that 'sociology is a distinctive way of thinking, a particular awareness of the nature of social life, an unwillingness to accept the superficial and the apparently obvious'.

Emile Durkheim was a pioneer in demonstrating scientific methodology in sociology. In his most acclaimed work, Rules of Sociological Method (1897), he emphasized on the methodology that he has described in his study, Suicide (1897).

The discipline of sociology appeared in many universities in the 1890s. Urbanization and industrialization were posing several social issues and the sociologists of those times were trying hard to find a scientific solution. However, they did not succeed. It was their strong belief that sociology was the key to the scientific growth of the society. Later, sociology emerged as a branch of scientific knowledge with theories resulting from scientific inferences, rather than mere guesswork or comments that were based on

Nature of Sociology

On a broader platform, sociology is the study of human interactions, their conditions and consequences. It is a type of science that account in the study of human interactions, their conditions and consequences. It is a type of science that comprises investigative techniques which are objective and systematic. It gives rise to the great the systematic and on objective and systematic. It gives rise to the evolution of the social truth that is based on empirical evidence and interpretation. empirical evidence and interpretation. However, it cannot be directly based on natural sciences, since human behaviour is a unique of sciences, since human behaviour is a unique phenomenon. It also differs from natural sciences such that the contents of natural sciences. sciences such that the contents of natural sciences are constant while human behavious

Sociology as a branch of knowledge has its own unique characteristics. It is rent from other sciences in certain rec different from other sciences in certain respects. An analysis of internal logical characteristics helps one to understand its main characteristics:

- Sociology is an independent science: It is not treated and studied as a branch of any other science. As an independent of any other science. As an independent science, it has its own field of study, boundary and method.
- Sociology is a social science and not a physical science: As a social science it focuses its attention on man, his social behavior it focuses its attention on man, his social behaviour, social activities and social life. It is related to other social sciences like hist.
- It is related to other social sciences like history, political science, economics, etc. Sociology is a categorical and • Sociology is a categorical and not a normative discipline: Sociology does but amoral. It is not make any kind of value judgments. Its or not make any kind of value judgments. Its approach is neither moral nor immediately neutral. It makes but amoral. It is ethically neutral. Its approach is neither moral nor impossible social policy or legislation or programme of the programme o social policy or legislation or programme. Sociology cannot deal with problems of good and evil, right and wrong, moral and i good and evil, right and wrong, moral and immoral.

· Sociology is a pure science and not an applied science: The main aim of pure science is acquisition of knowledge, irrespective of whether the acquired knowledge is useful or can be put to use. On the other hand, applied science applies acquired knowledge into life.

Sociology is relatively abstract and not concrete science: It is not interested in concrete manifestation of human events. It is more concerned with the form of human events and their patterns. For instance, sociology is not specifically concerned with wars and revolutions but in the general social phenomena, as types of social conflict.

- · Sociology is not based on particular subjects or individuals, but is a general science: Sociology tries to find out general laws or principles about human interaction and associations about the nature, forms, content and structure of human groups and societies. It adopts a general approach on the basis of a study of some selected events.
- Sociology is a rational and empirical science: There are two broad ways of approach to scientific knowledge, one is empiricism and the other is rationalism. Empiricism emphasizes experiences and facts that result from observation and experiment. Rationalism stresses reason and theories that result from logical inference. In sociological inquiry, both are significant.

Scope of Sociology

According to Morris Ginsberg, the scope of sociology includes a broad study of human interactions, their conditions and consequences. Some writers would restrict its scope to the relations arising out of acts of will, but this is an unjustifiable and unworkable limitation. Many interactions between individuals are not consciously determined or apprehended. One of the most interesting problems confronting the student of society is to determine the respective roles of reason or rational purpose and of impulse and the unconsciousness in social life.

In this case, sociology must be capable of dealing with the complete issue or network of social relationships. Since these relationships are assumed to be dependent on the nature of individuals; (i) to one another, (ii) to the community, (iii) to the external environment. This can be explained if every social event can be traced back to its origin, as influenced by complex interactions. A combination of these interactions is comprised within a community, with respect to external influences. But this ideal, if generously conceived, is clearly too ambitious. Sociology involves a systematic and objective study of human society. Sociologists study individuals' social actions. Social relationships, for instance, those between a husband and a wife, a teacher and a student, a buyer and a seller and social processes, namely, co-operation, competition, conflict and organizations, communities and nations and social structures (family, class and state), give rise to sociological queries. Explanations that are derived from norms and values result in the formation of social institutions. Thus, sociology can be defined as the study of social life. Sociology comprises a variety of apprehensions and interests. It is aimed at providing classified forms of relationships within societies, institutions and associations. These relationships pertain to economic, political, moral, religious and social aspects of human life. Though, so far no collective agreement has been reached on the essence of sociology, yet it is established that sociology deals with the study of interaction systems, which shape social institutions, the state and the non-native order. Therefore, in sociology we study about social organization, social structure, institutions and culture.

Emergence of Sociology

NOTES

(i) Formal school

NOTES

The formal school defined sociology as a social science that has definite characteristics. This school was advocated by George Simmel, Ferdinand Tonnies, Alfred Vierkandt and Leopord Von Wiese. On the other hand, the synthetic school with Durkheim, Hobhouse and Sorokin attempted to bring together a type of coordination among all social sciences.

The formal school supported the idea of giving sociology a suitable subject matter to make it a distinct discipline. It stressed on the study of forms of social relationships and considered sociology as independent. Simmel defined sociology as a specific social science that describes, organizes, analyses and visually explains the forms of social relationships. To put it in a different way, social interactions should be classified into various forms or types and analysed. Simmel argued that social interactions have various forms. He conducted researches on formal relationships like cooperation, competition, sub and super ordinate relationships, etc. He said, 'however diverse the interests are identical.' His main emphasis was to conceptualize these forms from human relationships which are not affected by different scenarios. Vierkandt believed that sociology should in the existence of two types of basic social processes in a human society. These are: (i) (ii) Disassociate processes like competition and conflict

Additionally, a blend of associative and disassociative processes also exists. Each of these processes can be further segregated into subclasses. These subclasses result in 650 categories of human relationships. Sociology should concentrate on discovering a basic force of change and consistency and should be influenced by the history of concrete and Gesellschaft (association). These were based on the level of closeness between and Gesellschaft (association). These were based on the level of closeness between between community and society. Max Weber outlined a particular field for sociology. He recommended that the aim of sociology was to identify or explain social behaviour, human beings cannot be called social. Sociology deals with learning and identifying the different types of social relationships.

Criticism of formal school

The formal school has come under criticism because it has focused only on abstract forms and ignored the more feasible parts of social life. It is not possible to study abstract forms that have been alienated from concrete relations. According to Ginsberg, the study of social relationships would never be complete if it is carried out in isolation, the only branch of social sciences that focuses on the types of social relationships. Political science and international law also study the same. Since it is not possible to sociology is not practical.

(ii) Synthetic school of sociology

Emergence of Sociology

The synthetic school defines sociology as a combination of social sciences.

It stresses on widening the range of sociology. Durkheim divided sociology into three main sections, these were, social morphology, social physiology and general sociology. Social morphology pertains to the lifestyle of people on the basis of their location or region. It comprises of factors like population, density, distribution, etc. One can further divide this into two categories, (i) analysis of density and type of population that influences social relationships and social groups and (ii) learning about social hierarchy or details related to the main categories of social groups and institutions, along with their operation. Social physiology deals with the origin and character of different social institutions, namely religion, morals, law, economic institutions, etc. The prime objective of general sociology is to frame general social laws. Efforts are still on to find out links between different types of institutions that are treated independently in social physiology and the possibilities of emergence of general social laws as a by-product. Hobhouse, a British sociologist, defined sociology as a field of science which focuses on the whole social life of man. It relates to other social sciences in a way that can be regarded as a blend of mutual exchange and stimulation. Karl Mannheim has explained sociology in terms of two key divisions, systematic and general sociology and historical sociology. Systematic sociology provides a methodical review of the main factors of coexistence, such that they are evident in every kind of society. Historical sociology deals with the historical array and existence of general forms of the society. This can be divided into two sectors, comparative sociology and social dynamics. Comparative sociology basically deals with identical historical changes and tries to highlight the general features by comparing them. It also separates general features from industrial features. Social dynamics is concerned with the interrelations that exist among different social factors and institutions in a given society, for example in an ancient society. Ginsberg has combined the main features of sociology in a way that they classify the different types and structures of social relations, specifically those that are clearly specified as institutions and associations. He tried to find connectivity between various parameters of social life, for example, economic, political, moral and legal, intellectual and social elements. It attempts to make the basic conditions of social change and persistence simpler and evaluates the sociological principles that influence social life.

Thus, on the basis of the viewpoints of many sociologists, the scope of sociology can be generally defined. To begin with, sociology should be concerned with the analysis of various institutions, associations and social groups, which have resulted from social relationships of individuals. The second step is an understanding of the different the links between various sections of the society. This objective is catered to by the functionalist school of sociology, as required. The Marxist school also exhibits the same opinion. Thus, the main area of discussion of sociology pertains to social structure. Sociology should also focus on aspects which are important in bringing about social stability and social change. Finally, sociology should also tackle issues related to the changes in pattern and the consequences of societal changes.

Sociology as a Science

The nature of sociology as a science has become a controversial issue. Some critics do not support the ideology of sociology being regarded as a science like all other social sciences. Sociology can be regarded as a science since it comprises objective and systematic methodologies of examination and assessment. It can also be evaluated as a

NOTES

social reality, on the basis of empirical data and explanation. However, it cannot be directly compared to natural sciences, since human behaviour is not similar to natural sciences. A science may be defined in at least two ways:

NOTES

- · A body of organized, verified knowledge which has been secured through scientific investigation
- · A method of study whereby a body of organized and verified knowledge is

However, if the first definition is accepted, then sociology can be termed a science, based on the theory that it creates a body of organized and verified knowledge, after scientific investigation. To the extent that sociology forsakes myth, folklore and wishful thinking and bases its conclusions on scientific evidence, it is a science. If science is defined as methods of study, then sociology can be defined as a science because it uses scientific techniques of study.

In the history of human thinking, few of our actions have been based on verified knowledge, for people through the ages have been guided mainly by folklore, norms, values and anticipations. Recently, very few people accepted the idea of systematic observations and analysis. W.F. Ogburn, an American sociologist, opines that sociology is a science. According to him, science is to be judged by three criteria:

- The reliability of its body of knowledge
- Its organization
- Its method

Sociology depends on reliable knowledge. Thus, sociological studies of population, families, group behaviour, evolution of institutions, the process of social change, are regarded as considerably reliable. Secondly, disjointed collection of facts cannot be a science. Science should be organized and the organization of science rests upon relationships. Sociology provides a science and the organization of science rests upon to relationships. Sociology provides a scope for inter-relationships, which is enough to encourage more discoveries. Moreover, with reference to method, a branch of knowledge can be called a science if it follows a scientific method, a branch of knows.
Sociological studies employ/various models to method in its studies and investigations. Sociological studies employ various methods like the historical method, case study method, social survey method, functional method, statistical method, etc. Though sociology can be considered a science, its scientific of be considered a science, its scientific character cannot be established because it is not as accurate as natural sciences. There as accurate as natural sciences. There is no denying the fact that sociology cannot experiment and predict in the same ways is no denying the fact that sociology cannot are the same ways. experiment and predict in the same way in which physical sciences do because human behaviour and relationships are peculiar and behaviour and relationships are peculiar and uncertain. Objectivity in sociology is not possible as man has his own prejudices or 11. possible as man has his own prejudices and bias. Social phenomena cannot be exact as it is too vast and human motivations are constitutions. it is too vast and human motivations are complex and it is difficult to make predictions

But such objectives raised against sociology as a science are refutable. Sociology make use of scientific methods in the study of the sciology does make use of scientific methods in the study of its subject matter. Though sociology does not support laboratory experiments. Not it does not support laboratory experiments. does not support laboratory experiments, yet it does employ the techniques of science, such as the measures of sociometry, schedule great and the support laboratory experiments. such as the measures of sociometry, schedule, questionnaire, interview and case history.

These relate measures of quantity with social place. These relate measures of quantity with social phenomenon. Moreover, a sociologist also uses observation and comparison. Sociology data uses observation and comparison. Sociology delineates cause-effect relationship. sociology is a scientific discipline which obeys the demands of validity that are implied by the word science. It classifies the form of social and so a validity that are implied in the science in the by the word science. It classifies the form of social relationships and determines the connectivity between different sectors of social life. connectivity between different sectors of social relationships and determines Social Order, considered sociology as a social and social order. Robert Bierstedt in his book, Social Order, considered sociology as a social and not a natural science.

Thus it can be said that science is a way to find out the truth and if sociology involves application of a range of techniques and methods in the right manner, then it will achieve a scientific character.

Human social activities can be observed through scientific exploration just like any other natural phenomenon. This exploration uses scientific techniques such as: scales of sociometry, schedule, questionnaire, interview and case history. These, in turn, apply quantitative measurements to social phenomenon. Hence, they can be compared to the technique of experimentation. Sociology attempts to identify the types and forms of social relationships, especially of institutions and associations. It tries to establish the relations between different factors of social life. It also involves the deduction of general laws through a systematic study of its material. The outcome of the study of sociological principles is used as a means to resolve social problems. Consequently, sociology can be compared to a science like social psychology, clinical psychology and other sciences that relate to the existence of mankind. A sociologist can also make optimum use of two other fundamental techniques of scientific reasoning, which are observation and comparison. Sociology can also be used in the building of laws and for futuristic calculations. These laws are usually relevant and are independent of cultural changes. Sociology also explains cause-effect relationships by the analysis of social procedures and relationships.

Importance of Sociology

The discipline of sociology is recognized widely today. Nowadays, there is growing realization about the importance of the scientific study of social phenomena and means of promoting what Giddings calls 'human adequacy'. It is of great value in modern complex society.

- Sociology makes a scientific study of society: Sociology has made it possible to study society in a systematic and scientific manner. Scientific knowledge about human society is needed in order to achieve progress in various fields.
- Sociology throws more light on the social nature of man: Sociology delves deep into the social nature of man. It tells us why man is a social animal, why he lives in groups, etc. It examines relationships between individuals and the society.
- Sociology improves our understanding of society and increases the power of social action: The science of society assists an individual to understand himself, his capacities, talents and limitations. It enables him to adjust to the environment. Knowledge of society, social groups, etc., helps us to lead an effective social life.
- · Sociology has contributed generously to enhance the value of human culture: Sociology has trained us in building a rational approach to questions that concern ourselves, our religion, customs, etc. It teaches one to have an objectoriented and balanced approach. It emphasizes the importance of ignoring petty personal prejudices, ambitions that are influenced by ego and envy.
- · Sociology studies the role of institutions in the development of the individual: The home and family, school and education, church and religion, states and government, marriage and family, etc., are important institutions through which a society functions. Furthermore, they are conditioners of an individual's knowledge of sociology.
- Sociological knowledge is indispensable for understanding and planning of the society: Sociological planning has been made easier by sociology. Sociology

NOTES

- is often considered a vehicle of social reform and social organization. It plays an important role in reconstruction of the society.
- The need for sociology in underdeveloped countries: Sociologists have drawn the attention of economists regarding the social factors that have contributed to the economic backwardness of a few countries. Economists has now realized the importance of sociological knowledge in analysing the economic affairs of a country.
- Study of society has helped several governments to promote the welfare of tribal people: It is not only civilized societies, tribal societies also have several socio-economic problems. Studies conducted by sociologists and anthropologists regarding tribal societies have helped many governments in undertaking various social measures to promote the welfare of tribal people.

Sociological Methods

Sociology has emerged as a distinct intellectual endeavour with the development of modern societies and the study of such societies is its principal concern. However, sociologists are also preoccupied with a broad range of issues about the nature of social interaction and human societies in general. Sociology also enables us to see the world from others' perspective rather than our own.

Comte and Spencer were, for the most part, the first sociologists. Their concerns with the means and paths of a sixty of the most part, the first sociologists. were with the means and paths of societal development and the conditions for harmony and continued development. The sand a and continued development. They presented quite different views on these issues and a comparison of their work set the standard quite different views on these issues and a littles. comparison of their work set the stage for discussion by the three famous personalities, Karl Marx. Emile Durkheim and Marx VI. Karl Marx, Emile Durkheim and Max Weber.

Emile Durkheim stressed on the practical existence of a society. He emphasized cial realities and saw sociology from a time that on social realities and saw sociology from a different point of view, as compared to that of psychology. Social realities restrict the same actions of psychology. of psychology. Social realities restrict the freedom of members of the society to act, think and feel differently, with respect to the freedom of members of the society to act, and are are think and feel differently, with respect to the society. Beliefs and moral codes are transferred from one generation to the post. transferred from one generation to the next and are imbibed by the individuals who form a society. One way of explaining social activities of a a society. One way of explaining social realities involves focusing on the cause of a social reality to explain its origin. The decisive social reality to explain its origin. The decisive cause of a social reality should be looked for among the facts that precede it. It should be looked it. It should be looked it. for among the facts that precede it. It should not depend on an individual's level of consciousness. Nevertheless, this social reality consciousness. Nevertheless, this social reality can be explained in a better way after a detailed study of its functions in the society its and the explained in a better way after a needs of detailed study of its functions in the society, its role in contributing to the general needs of the social beings and its utility in establishing a society its role in contributing to the general needs of the social beings and its utility in establishing a social being the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social beings and its utility in establishing a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social being a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social being a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social being a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social being a social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way are the social reality can be explained in a better way the social beings and its utility in establishing a social order. Durkheim believed that this social reality still survives because it is useful. social reality still survives because it is useful to the society. They owe their existence to their contributions to the maintenance of a society, in one or more ways.

Durkheim is more inclined to find harmony and he attempts to uncover the essential area of collective life which are responsible. features of collective life which are responsible for producing it. He determines that hy group existence are specified by group existence of collective life which are responsible for producing it. He determines that hy group existence of collective life which are responsible for producing it. He determines that there is a realm of 'social facts', ways of thinking, acting and feeling, which are produced product of the development to produce an interest of the development of by group existence, which tend to produce an integrated society. Modern society is the some problems for integrated society. Modern society is the some problems for integrated society. product of the development of the division of labour and its recent complexity presents essential features of the division. However, Durlet and its recent complexity presents are found the some problems for integration. However, Durkheim is confident that he has found the essential features of harmonious, collective life with the confident that he has found the intervene.

essential features of harmonious, collective life which will allow sociology to intervene.

Weber views the development of the which will allow sociology to intervene. Weber views the development of modern society as a much less orderly affair esent condition. He can be possibility of diagram of the condition. and is rather pessimistic about the possibility of discovering some means of harmonizing its present condition. He attempts to understand we have a some means of harmonizing to understand we have of society. its present condition. He attempts to understand various institutions and states of society,

in terms of the actions of individuals. His central concept for this purpose is 'social action'. He analyses the organizations of individuals in different positions on the basis of their levels of motivation. These, in turn, rest on subjective meanings which persons attach to the things and other persons in their environment. On this basis, he examines the relation between different forms of authority, social organizations and economic distribution of rewards. He is pessimistic about the bureaucratic form of domination that is found in modern society. In his view, it is a very stable form of domination of powerful

Sociology differs from most of the natural sciences in dealing with a phenomenon, which is often difficult and sometimes impossible to measure or calculate, or to subsume under relations of causality. However, this does not involve a total divergence in the methods of inquiry. It involves considering the limits of sociological enquiry and assessing what can be practically achieved. In sociology, five important methods or approaches can be distinguished, they are as follows.

- Historical Method: This method has taken two principal forms. The first is that of early sociologists, influenced by the philosophy of history and afterwards by biological theory of evolution. This approach involves a certain order of priorities in the problems for research and theory. It concentrates on problems of the origin of development and transformation of social institutions, societies and civilization. It is concerned with the whole span of human history and with all major institutions of society, as in the work of Comte, Spencer, etc. In Marx's view, the most important thing about people is their practical activity. The way people produce for themselves, gives shape to other aspects of their society and culture. In this way, they relate to nature and to one another in society. These are the most fundamental sets of relations. These sets of relations change and develop over the course of history. They change from one 'mode of production' to another.
- Comparative Method: This method was considered the method par excellence of sociology for long. It was first used by evolutionist sociologists, but its use did not involve a necessary commitment to an evolutionary approach. Durkheim, in the Rules of Sociological Method, clearly explained the significance of the method. After claiming that sociological explanation consists entirely of the establishment of causal connections, he observes that the only way to demonstrate that one phenomenon is the cause of another is to examine cases in which the two phenomena are simultaneously present or absent. Thus it is to be established whether one does depend on the other, or not. In many natural sciences the establishment of causal connections is facilitated by experiment, but since experiment is impossible in sociology, Durkheim suggests the use of the method of indirect experiment, i.e., the comparative method.
- Functionalist Method: In sociology, this method first emerged in the form of a response against the approach and assertions of evolutionists. It criticized the immature and outward application of the comparative method and the methods of 'conjectural history'. These methods used data that was neither verified nor systematic, on ancient societies, for the reconstruction of early stages of human social life. The functionalist method also criticized the objective or claim made by evolutionists to present the complete social history of mankind in scientific terms. The notion of social function was formulated by Herbert Spencer in the 19th century. Durkheim defined the function of a social institution as the correspondence between it and the needs of social organism.

- Formal or Systematic Method: Formal or systematic sociology represented a reaction against the evolutionary and encyclopedic science of early sociologists. Its originator was George Simmel and it remained largely a German approach to sociology. Simmel argues that sociology is a new method, a new way of looking at facts which are already treated by other social sciences. According to him, this new approach consists of considering the 'forms' of sociation or interaction, as distinguished from the historical content. Sociology is therefore also concerned with forms of interaction which have not been studied at all by traditional social sciences. These forms appear not in major institutions, such as the state, the economic system and so on, but in minor and fleeting relationships between individuals.
- Structural Method: Claude Levi-Strauss proposed the structural method. Levi-Strauss offered new insights of analysis. According to Edmund Leach, 'Levi-Straus has provided us with a new set of hypotheses about familiar material. We can look again at what we thought was understood and begin to gain entirely new insights'. The structural method began to have a certain influence, particularly in renewing the discussion of the concept of social structure.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 5. What are the three criteria based on which W.F. Ogburn opined that sociology is a science?
- 6. Why is objectivity not possible in sociology?
- 7. How does Weber view the development of modern society?

INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND FOR THE EMERGENCE OF SOCIOLOGY IN THE WESTERN WORLD

Enlightenment is a major contributing factor to the development of sociology in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries. Enlighteness is to be the source behind ideas like for the source behind it is source behind in the source behind in the source behind it is source behind in the source b eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries. Enlightenment of sociology in the behind ideas like freedom, democracy and minimum the society and minimum to be society. behind ideas like freedom, democracy and primary values of society; the principles that consisted as which society runs now-a-days. Enlightenment was basically an intellectual movement traditional and primary philosophers and thin that consisted of many philosophers and thinkers. These philosophers challenged the Enlightenment was to an intellectual move of the society of the society of the society. traditional and existing concepts of the society. The aim of the philosophers of the church and develop a minimum was basically an intellectual traditional and existing concepts of the society. The aim of the philosophers of the church and develop a minimum traditional traditional and develop a minimum traditional tr Enlightenment was to make people stop blindly following and listening to the ideals of the people must solve the church and develop a critical thinking capacity. church and develop a critical thinking capacity of their own. The thinkers wanted the problems on their own. The thinkers wanted the problems on their own. people must solve their problems on their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of their own instead of waiting for God to solve flourished during the control of the control problems. These philosophers on their own instead of waiting for God to sol flourished during this time period because of modern period because of modern and emergent of other types of modern period because of modern and emergent of the condensation and the condensation are condensation. flourished during this time period because of publishing of newspapers and emerging People were now because of publishing of newspapers and painting and painting of newspapers and painting of newspapers. of other types of media. The period because of publishing of newspapers and emergence of arts, writings and painting was ever changing. The training more open minded. People were now becoming more open minded and were learning to live in a society of as well as technological became a society of as well as technological became as well as technological became a society of as well as technological became a society of a society of as well as technological became a society of as well as technological became a society of a was ever changing. The life of people became easier and better which led to economic as well as technological boom in the society. as well as technological boom in the society.

1.4.1 The Works of Intellectual Philosophers in Sociology

Emergence of Sociology

NOTES

The European intellectuals and thinkers during this period developed the tenets of sociology and tried to explain the socio-political changes that were taking place around them. They also tried to explain whether these changes were good for the society or not. These intellectual philosophers were Auguste Comte, Herbert Spencer, Georg Simmel, Karl Marx, Emile Durkheim and Max Weber. These intellectual philosophers later came to be known as the classical theorists and founders of sociology.

- 1. Auguste Comte (1798-1857): Auguste Comte was a French Philosopher who came to be known as the Father of Sociology. Auguste Comte used science to understand and explain the changes taking place in the French society and coined the term sociology. He described the study of society through his scientific approach and considered sociology to be a branch of natural science. He believed that the society progressed through three stages: theological, meta-physical and positive. According to Comte, the positive stage was a scientific stage that explored the natural laws governing social changes. It was during this stage that order could be restored in the society. He developed the philosophy of positivism to understand the social world through a scientific approach. According to him, positivism enabled one to understand how a phenomenon occurred and not how. Comte was also of the opinion that using the scientific approach, people could understand how social changes affected their everyday lives.
- 2. Herbert Spencer (1820-1903): Herbert Spencer was an English sociologist and philosopher who played a major role in the intellectual development of sociology in the nineteenth century. He believed that sociology was evolutionistic and has evolved like organisms do. The main focus of his study was on the evolutionary growth of the social structures that make up the society. According to Spencer, evolution began in the inorganic world of matter and later went through the organic or living world of the plants or animals and ended in the human and social world. He believed that society also went through these phases and followed the same natural law of evolution that living beings did.
- 3. Emile Durkheim (1858-1917): Durkheim was a French sociologist. He tried to establish sociology as an independent and distinct science. He is considered as the builder of sociology. Durkheim was a modern philosopher who attempted to study the reality of society. According to him, the reality of the society was a group and the social changes that take place around the group. He studied the society objectively, empirically and factually which none of the philosophers wanted to do. Durkheim considered sociology as the study of social facts. According to him social life could be analysed only in terms of social facts which externally affected an individual, a group and finally the society.
- 4. Max Weber (1864-1920): Max Weber was a German sociologist and philosopher. He contributed to the evolution of sociology as a science. According to Weber, the basic unit of the society was an individual and it was essential to scientifically analyse the behaviour, emotions, actions and relationships of an individual. He believed in interpretative understanding of the society. According to him, the aim of a social scientist was to study the inner meaning of a social phenomenon. He considered social actions and human relationships to be qualitative and not quantitative and so suggested that these must be interpreted. According to Weber, empathy and objectivity were required for the interpretative understanding of any social phenomenon.

NOTES

- 5. Karl Marx (1818-1883): Karl Marx was a German writer, thinker and critique. Karl Marx mainly studied about the issues that were faced by people in the society. According to him, people in all societies struggled to live in the society and their struggles brought about several changes in the society and in the manner in which the people behaved with each other. Thus, he believed that the struggle of the people in the society also affected the relationships and actions of the people. He studied about social issues like class formation, class distinction, exploitation, poverty, alienation and social changes.
- 6. Georg Simmel (1858-1918): Georg Simmel studies sociology as a formal discipline. According to him, sociology deals with social relationships, the process of socialization and social organization. Simmel basically studied about social relationships. He studied the different forms of social relationships like co-operation, competition, division of labour, subordination, etc. According to Simmel, the scope of sociology was limited to only the study of social relationships whereas their contents were studied by other social sciences.

Sociology as a scientific discipline

Sociology evolved as a scientific discipline mainly because of the fact that applied and adopted methods of natural sciences. The philosophers were always divided on whether sociology could be considered as a scientific discipline or not. Science as a discipline is a body of systematic knowledge. Science collects facts and links them in a sequence to reach a conclusion. Science has the following characteristics: objectivity, observation, accurate prediction, cause-effect relationship and experimentation. The philosophers considered sociology as a science because of the following reasons:

- Sociology used observation as a tool: According to philosophers, the sociologist
 studies the society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society as an observer.

 The sociology are all as a society studies the society as an observer. The sociologist considered the whole world as a laboratory and applied his about the a laboratory and applied his observation into understanding and interpreting the
- Sociology was based on scientific methods: Sociology, according to philosophers, was the study of human actions using scientific investigation.
- Sociology is objective: The philosophers who cast sociology as a science helieved that objectivity was possible. believed that objectivity was possible in sociology. Sociology was based on objective
- Sociology described cause-effect relationship: According to philosophers, sociology like natural sciences translationship: According to philosophers, thus sociology like natural sciences traced the causes and found answers; thus
- Sociology made accurate measurements: Like science, sociology accurately measured social relationships and phenomena. measured social relationships and phenomenon. Sociology accurate to effectively and accurately measure social. to effectively and accurately measure social relationships.
- Prediction was possible: Sociology, like natural sciences framed laws and

A lot of philosophers were also of the opinion that sociology was not a science because it did not meet the criteria to qualify as a scientify. it did not meet the criteria to qualify as a scientific discipline. According to these philosophers, sociology lacked objectivity because philosophers, sociology lacked objectivity because a sociologist had his own prejudices and could be biased. In addition, they believed the and could be biased. In addition, they believed that complete objectivity in studying human behaviour was not possible. Sociology doct human behaviour was not possible. Sociology dealt with social relationships that could not be studied objectively like social structures. Social not be studied objectively like social structures. Sociology was not based on experimentation

and hence could not be called a science. According to some philosophers, society, human relationships and human behaviour could not be put in a laboratory and experimented upon. Sociology also did not qualify as a science because it could not make accurate predictions. Since sociology dealt with human relationships and human behaviour, it was not easy to collect data for the same and predict the results. Also it was not possible to predict how a certain human would react or behave to a social change and so sociology was called a behavioural science and not a natural science. Another reason why sociology did not qualify as natural science was the fact that sociology could not make accurate measurement. It was not possible to accurately determine and measure the human behaviour or relationships which were qualitative and not quantitative. Lack of generalization in sociology was another reason why it could not be called a science. The reason why generalization was not possible in sociology was because no two individuals were alike and so human behaviour, relationships differed and were uniform and universally applicable.

Thus sociology evolved as a social science and not a natural science. As a scientific discipline, sociology emerged as a positive, pure, abstract, generalizing, rational and empirical science.

Thus, the intellectual philosophers were able to develop sociology as a scientific discipline. The study of these philosophers proved that the scientific study of society was possible only through a sociological analysis. They developed sociology to understand and analyse the various social problems that the people faced. Sociology according to these philosophers studied groups, cultures and societies comparatively. Sociology also emerged as a discipline that studied a wide range of social issues and how these affected the lives of the people and thus the society as a whole.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 8. What was the main aim of the philosophers of Enlightenment?
- 9. Who studied sociology purely on the basis of human relationships?
- 10. Who studied the social issues in sociology and what were the issues?
- 11. What is the nature of sociology as a science?

SUMMARY 1.5

- The emergence of sociology as a discipline can be traced back to the nineteenth century. Thus, sociology is not a very old field of study.
- The idea behind the emergence of sociology was to enable people to understand why the society functions the way it does.
- · Sociology being the study of social relationships and institutions can be studied at all levels of the society as well as the life of a human being. While at the individual level, it deals with personal issue; at the society level, it deals with the issues that the society has to face daily.
- There were several factors that contributed to the development of sociology as a

- Sociology is a field of science that flourished during the first part of the 19th century. It came into existence as an academic response to modernism. Since transportation and communication facilities have become increasingly advanced, it is easier for people in different parts of the world to stay connected.
- Sociology should cover the complete network of social relationships. It is presumed that these relationships depend on the position of individuals in the hierarchy of relations, with respect: (i) to one another, (ii) to the community and (iii) to the external environment.
- For achieving a perfect sociological rationalization, it is important to reach the roots of every social event with respect to the vital and psychological capacities of individuals. These capacities may be influenced by complex interactions which are a vital constituent of the community, which is connected to the external environment. If this ideal is generously conceived, it is too ambitious.
- W.F. Ogburn opines that sociology is a science. According to him, science is to be judged by three criteria:
- o The reliability of its body of knowledge
- o Its organization
- o Its method
- Sociology differs from most of the natural sciences in dealing with phenomena, which are often difficult and sometimes impossible to measure or calculate, or to subsume under relations of causality. However, this does not involve a total divergence in the methods of inquiry. It involves considering the limits upon sociological enquiry and assessing more realistically what it can achieve.
- In sociology, five important methods or approaches can be distinguished, they are
 - o The historical method
 - o The comparative method
 - o The functionalist method
 - o The formal or systematic method
 - o The structural method
- During the late eighteenth century and early nineteenth century, there were several social and political changes that the design that the several social and political changes that the design that the several social and political changes that the design that the several social and political changes that the design that the several social and political changes that the several several social and political changes that the several s social and political changes that took place in the western world including the French Revolution and the Industrial B French Revolution and the Industrial Revolution.
- The increasing social changes and awareness of people regarding the society triggered many intellectuals to study at the society at the triggered many intellectuals to study about the causes and effects of the changes and thus emerged.
- Sociology is the study of society and the changes taking place in it. Sociology today, is practiced as a disciplina and today, is practiced as a discipline and even taught to students across the world.

KEY TERMS

- Enlightenment: A European intellectual movement of the late seventeenth and eighteenth centuries emphasizing reason on the late seventeenth and tradition
- eighteenth centuries emphasizing reason and individualism rather than tradition.

 Metaphysical: Metaphysics in • Metaphysical: Metaphysics is a branch of philosophy investigating fundamental nature of being and the worlds. fundamental nature of being and the world that encompasses it.

ANSWERS TO 'CHECK YOUR PROGRESS'

- 1. The main contributing factors to the emergence of sociology are French revolution, Industrial revolution and Enlightenment.
- 2. The French Revolution brought about changes in family life by introducing civil marriage and divorce.
- 3. Machines were used for production of goods during and after Industrial revolution because these increased the productivity while at the same time reduced the time, manpower and money required.
- 4. Telegraph as a means of communication was introduced during the Industrial revolution.
- 5. In the opinion of W.F. Ogburn, an American sociologist, sociology was categorized as a discipline of science because it fulfilled the following three criteria:
 - The reliability of its body of knowledge
 - Its organization
 - Its method
- 6. Objectivity is not possible in sociology as man has his own prejudices and bias.
- 7. Weber viewed the development of modern society as a much less orderly affair and is rather pessimistic about the possibility of discovering some means of harmonizing its present condition.
- 8. The main aim of the philosophers of enlightenment was to make people aware of their thinking capabilities. The philosophers wanted the people to think critically and act and solve their problems on their own instead of waiting for God to solve the problems.
- 9. George Simmel studied sociology only on the basis of human relationships.
- 10. Karl Marx studied the social issues while working on the evolution of sociology. The various issues he studied were class formation, class formation, class distinction, alienation, poverty and social changes.
- 11. Sociology as a science is a behavioural science. Sociology unlike natural sciences is social, positive, pure, abstract, rational and empirical science.

QUESTIONS AND EXERCISES

Short-Answer Questions

- 1. Briefly describe the role of French Revolution on the emergence of sociology.
- 2. How did Industrial Revolution contribute to the emergence of sociology? State in brief.
- 3. Briefly state the views of Auguste Comte on sociology.
- 4. How did Max Weber study sociology?

NOTES

- 1. Is sociology a science? Support your answer with arguments.
- Explain the work of philosophers of the Enlightenment and how sociology emerged based on their works.
- 3. Discuss the different sociological methods.
- 4. Analyse the nature and scope of sociology.

1.9 FURTHER READING

- Abel, Theodore. 1980. The Foundations of Sociological Theory. Jaipur: Rawat Publications.
- Abraham, Francis M. and John Henry Morgan. 1985. Sociological Thought. Chennai: Macmillan India.
- Aron, Raymond. 1965. Main Currents in Sociological Thought, Vol. I and II. Middlesex: Penguin Books.
- Boguardus, Emory S. 1969. The Development of Social Theory. Mumbai: Vakils, Feffa and Simons.
- Ritzer, George. 1988. Sociological Theory, Second edition. New York: McGraw-Hill.

UNIT 2 AUGUSTE COMTE

Structure

- 2.0 Introduction
- 2.1 Unit Objectives
- 2.2 Comte and Positivism
- 2.3 Hierarchy of Sciences
- 2.4 Summary
- 2.5 Key Terms
- 2.6 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'
- 2.7 Questions and Exercises
- 2.8 Further Reading

2.0 INTRODUCTION

As a philosophical ideology and movement, positivism first assumed its distinctive features in the work of the French philosopher Auguste Comte, who named the systematized science of sociology. It then developed through several stages known by various names, such as Empiriocriticism, Logical Positivism and Logical Empiricism and finally in the mid-20th century flowed into the movement known as Analytic and Linguistic philosophy. In its basic ideological posture, positivism is worldly, secular, anti-theological and anti meta-physical.

In his three stages, Comte combined what he considered to be an account of the historical order of development with a logical analysis of the levelled structure of the sciences. By arranging the six basic and pure sciences one upon the other in a pyramid, Comte prepared the way for Logical positivism to 'reduce' each level to the one below.

2.1 UNIT OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able to:

- Analyse the science of sociology theory propounded by Comte
- Discuss the law of human progress discussed by Comte
- Elaborate on the hierarchy of sciences proposed by Comte
- Understand social statics and dynamics as analysed by Comte

2.2 COMTE AND POSITIVISM

Auguste Comte was born in France in 1798 during the height of the French Revolution, a period of chaos and unrest. His parents were devout Catholics and ardent royalists. Comte was a brilliant student excelling in physics and math with an unusual memory. His early career was poorly organized and a rather self-destructive affair in which he proceeded to 'shoot himself in the foot' several times. Along with 14 others he was expelled from school after a student uprising over a geometry instructor, thus dashing hopes of an otherwise promising academic career.

NOTES

He did, nonetheless, manage to become secretary to Henri St. Simon, another prominent thinker with whom Comte shared many ideas. He met, and later married, a nineteen-year-old prostitute but had an unhappy married life. He had a falling out with St. Simon and organized on his own a subscription series of lectures on the 'Positive Philosophy'. Comte attempted suicide by throwing himself into the Seine and was rescued by a passer-by. Comte interpreted this Samaritan act as a sign that his mission in life was to complete and disseminate his positive philosophy.

In 1829, Comte completed the series of lectures, and between 1830 and 1842, published his Cours de Philosophie Positive in six volumes. In 1832, he managed to achieve a minor appointment at the Ecole Poly-technique, but, in 1844, he wrote a scathing article on St. Simon and the Ecole and was dismissed. During the same year, two other important events also occurred. Comte obtained a small stipend from the English philosopher, John Stuart Mill, who had been impressed by his Positive Philosophy, and he also began an affair with Madame Clotilde de Vaux. In 1846, she died in his arms and Comte was later to credit her with teaching him about the affective tendencies of human nature, a consideration which was to inform his suggestion for a 'religion of humanity'

In fact, Comte was to see this religion of humanity as part of the practical application philosophy as recommended in 1 of his philosophy as recommended in his works—The System of Positive Polity of Treatise of Sociology: Institution of Positive Polity of Treatise of Sociology: Institution of Positive Polity of Polity o Treatise of Sociology: Instituting the Religion of Humanity. Positive Philosophy was the work in which he outlined him. was the work in which he outlined his preferred way of knowing the world, and the Positive Polity contained his ideas characteristics. Positive Polity contained his ideas about how to improve society, and how to establish what was, in his view, the best society. what was, in his view, the best society possible by applying this knowledge.

According to Comte, a stable social order rested on a consistent form of thought as leading to the social order rested on a consistent form of thought He saw his own thought as leading to the establishment of a more stable, industrial order. He saw this relationship between the order. He saw this relationship between thought and practice as a natural, rather than causal one and saw thought as evolving not. causal one and saw thought as evolving naturally towards the kind of philosophy which he was formulating and recommending. We are the same than the same that the same than the same that the same than the same tha he was formulating and recommending. Ways of thinking, of philosophizing, of knowing the world, were, in his view, primary both in the world, were the world the world, were, in his view, primary, both in the history of humankind and in his own practice. In other words, Comte believed that practice. In other words, Comte believed that people acted in such a way as to correspond with the way they thought. In different society with the way they thought. In different societies or periods of history, furthermore, person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person's way of thinking, of knowing their way as to control person way as to control person's way of thinking their way as to control person way of thinking their way as to control person way of thinking their way as to control person way of thinking their way as to control person way of thinking their way as to control person way of thinking their way as to control person way of thinking their way as to control person way of their way as to control person way as to control person way as to control person way of their way as to control person way as to c person's way of thinking, of knowing their world, was responsible for producing the kind of society in which they lived.

Science of Sociology

According to Comte, sociology is a social, organic science. Sociology is a relatively ne evolving science dependent upon all the force. evolving science dependent upon all the foregoing theories in science. However, quite clear that sociology is gradually moving theories in science. However, quite clear that sociology is gradually moving theories in science. However, comte had a very wide conception of sociology to are subsumed under its conception of sociology. Comte had a very wide conception of sociology. According to him, all other social science together. He posited at the believed in a unified in the social science of the science of the social science of the social science of the social science of the science of the social science of the scie of the society and the set of rules governing its functions.

Since sociology tries to explore the principles which help society to stay integrated laws sciential that the law of social and in order, it is essential that the law of sociology should be scientific. In order to me laws, namely observations they should bass through should be scientific. In order to me laws, namely observations they should bass through should be scientific. the societal laws scientific, they should pass through the full circle of making of scientific and needs to be emphasized. laws, namely observation, experimentation, comparison and classification. needs to be emphasized here is the fact that in making these societal laws, use of

Comte maintained that the positive science of society called sociology must pursue the method which was followed by definite sciences like astronomy, physics, chemistry, and biology. He insisted that the new science must be positive. Positive means pursuing scientific methods of analysis and prognosis. The method of sociology includes observation as well as experimentation. Observation must be guided by a theory of social phenomena. Experimentation is controlled observation. In sociology, experimentation involves the study of pathological cases. According to him, central to sociology is the comparison of different co-existing states of human society on the various parts of the earth's surface. By this method, he argued, the different stages of evolution may be allowed once. These conventional methods of science, like observation, experimentation and comparison, must be used in combination with the historical method.

Law of Human Progress

The law of human progress is one of Comte's the most important central ideas. He proposed that the evolution of the human mind is parallel to the evolution of any individual mind. The development of the individual human organism is termed as ontogeny. This forms the basis for the development of phylogeny or the development of the human race. In our childhood, we all believed in imaginary worlds; when we become adults, we start accepting the world with its vices and virtues. Mankind has also undertaken quite a similar journey; from believing in the make-belief to the maturity of adulthood.

According to Comte:

Each of our leading conceptions—each branch of our knowledge passes successively through three different theoretical conditions: the Theological or fictitious; Metaphysical or abstract; and the Scientific or positive. In theological state, human mind, seeking the essential nature of beings, the first and final causes (the origin of purpose) of all effects supposes all phenomena to be produced by the immediate action of supernatural beings. In Metapysical state the mind supposes abstract forces, veritable entities (that is personified abstractions) capable of producing all phenomena. In the final, the positive state, the mind has given over the vain search after Absolute notions, the origin of destination of the universe, and the causes of phenomena, and applies itself to the study of their laws, that is, their invariable relations of succession and resemblance

Theological or Fictitious State: Law of Three Stages

According to Comteian proposition, all theoretical conceptions, whether general or special, bear a supernatural influence. This kind of thinking is found among the primitive people are subsumed under it. He believed in a unified integral study of all social sciences taken of the society and the set of rule.

and orderly thinking. However, Comte argues that the primitive man as well as children do have scientific outlook also. Owing to theological state of their minds, their understanding is characterized by an unscientific outlook. The main subject matter of social sciences taken of the society and the set of rule. and sometimes the thinking of children. At this state, there is substantial lack of logical together. He posited that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure of the sociology triangles governing its functional social sciences that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the social sciences that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society and sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of sociology is society and sociology is society. It studies the structure that the subject matter of socio tend man towards theological or fictitious interpretation of events. Unable to discover the natural causes of various happenings, the primitive man attributed them to imaginary or divine force. The explanation of natural events in non-natural, divine or imaginary conditions is known as theological or fictitious state. The theological state implies belief in the other world wherein reside divine forces which control the events in this world.

22

It is clear that theological state implies a belief in divine and extraterrestrial forces. Comte has classified the theological state further in three stages:

NOTES

Fetishism: The first and primary stage in the theological state is that of fetishism. Fetishism is a belief that there is some living spirit in non-living objects. This is also known as animism. The concept of animism signifies that the inanimate objects are not dead but are possessed by living spirits. One can argue that in India, particularly rural and tribal areas, there is a widespread belief that some deities reside in tree, stones and mountains. Therefore it has been seen that people engage in the worship of a particular tree, stone mountain.

Polytheism: With the gradual development in human thinking, there occurred a change in the form of thinking. Polytheism is the next stage to fetishism. In this stage, man had classified god and every natural force had a presiding deity. Each god had some definite function and his scope and area of action was determined.

Monotheism: The last and most developed form of theological state is seen manifested in monotheism. As the very term monotheism implies, at this level of human thinking a belief in one god had replaced the earlier belief in many gods. The monotheistic thinking symbolizes the victory of human intellect and reason over non-intellectual and irrational thinking. In monotheism, it is believed that one God is supreme and that he is responsible for the maintenance of order and system in the world.

Metaphysical or abstract state

The metaphysical or abstract thinking marks the second stage in the evolution of human mind. According to Comte analysis mind. According to Comte, each successive stage is an improvement upon the earlief stage. With the gradual improvement in stage. With the gradual improvement in human mind, human problems also become more intricate. The theological state was a mention of the state was a mention more intricate. The theological state was not adequate to tackle these improvements efficiently. The appearance of confliction efficiently. The appearance of conflicting and opposite forces in the world presented problems which could not be successful. problems which could not be successfully tackled by monotheism. It was difficult to believe that the same god was responsible of believe that the same god was responsible for prehistoric creation as well as destruction. A single god could not account for simple A single god could not account for simultaneous creation as well as destruction. In order to resolve this intellectual query metaphysical distriction and destruction. In order to resolve this intellectual query metaphysical distriction. resolve this intellectual query, metaphysical thinking was developed. Under metaphysical thinking, people believe that an abstract power and a destruction. In the event thinking, people believe that an abstract power or force guides and determines the event in the world. Metaphysical mind disregard 1. 1. 2005. in the world. Metaphysical mind disregards belief in the presence of several gods.

This state is the most advance and developed form of the human mind. All metaphysic knowledge is based upon speculation and its constitution and its constit knowledge is based upon speculation and is at best inferential knowledge. There are the direct means to confirm the findings of motors. direct means to confirm the findings of metaphysical knowledge. There belief or temperament. The modern temperament knowledge; it is purely a matter and temperament. belief or temperament. The modern temperament of man is such that it cannot remain satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for a significant of man is such that it cannot remain the satisfied with mere guesswork. satisfied with mere guesswork; it craves for positive knowledge which can be scientifical confirmed. The positive and scientific knowledge which can be scientifically these factors. confirmed. The positive and scientific knowledge which can be scientific knowledge is based upon facts, and these factors the beside of the based upon facts. are gathered by observation and experience. The observation and classification of facts, and these are the beginning of scientific knowledge. The observation and classification of facts and drives a are the beginning of scientific knowledge. The observation and classification of conclusions. These conclusions, in turn are these facts we generalize and difference to the conclusions of the conclusions conclusions. These conclusions, in turn, are subjected to verification. Once verification. Once verification. these become established laws, which can be relied upon in gathering and classifying facts. Scientific thinking is thoroughly rational facts. Scientific thinking is thoroughly rational and in it there is no place for any belief superstition. According to Comte, the human mind before reaching the state of positivismust have passed through the two earlier stages. must have passed through the two earlier stages of theological and metaphysical state

The three stages suggested by Comte have a strong idealistic basis. Yet he correlated every stage of evolution of the human mind with social organizations present in that period. The theological stage that corresponds roughly with the ancient age is dominated by the rule of the army and priests. In the metaphysical state, society was dominated by clergy and lawyers. This state roughly falls during the Middle Ages and the Renaissance. The modern era marks the beginning of the positive state and is generally ruled by industrialists and scientific moral guides. In the first state, the family takes centrestage, while in the second, the State rises to prominence. In the third state, however, the entire civilization has become an operative social unit.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 1. What is the main subject matter of theological state?
- 2. What is the second stage of the evolution of human mind?
- 3. What is the other name for Comteian fetishism?

2.3 HIERARCHY OF SCIENCES

The hierarchy of sciences is another theory posited by Comte that gained importance in the realm of sociology. This theory is related closely to the law of the three stages. As mankind moves on from one stage to another, evolving from the knowledge of every step, similarly, scientific knowledge also passes from one stage to the next, evolving through every step, though at a different rate. 'Any kind of knowledge reaches the positive stage early in proportion to its generality, simplicity, and independence of other departments.' Thus, we notice that astrology, which is the most simple and general type of all natural sciences, developed first and was followed by chemistry, biology and physics. Sociology comes last in this list of sciences. The evolution and development of the sciences depended upon the development of the sciences that came before it in a hierarchy marked by the law of increasing complexity.

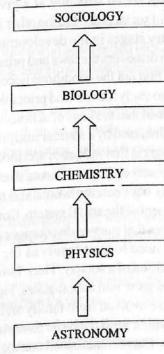


Fig. 2.1 Hierarchy of Sciences

NOTES

24

NOTES

The most independent and complex of all sciences are the social sciences. These developed after the other distinct sciences emerged and definitely helped in the completion of the modern, positive method. The sciences that evolved prior to the social sciences had just prepared the groundwork. The general sense of the natural law developed through the social sciences. This was possible as social science employs all the resources that physical sciences did, and also uses the historical method which investigate by gradual filtration, unlike other methods that investigate by comparison. The chief phenomenon in sociology that is the gradual and continuous influence of generations upon each other would be misguided or unnoticed for want of the necessary key historical analysis. Sociology, like all other later sciences, also depended on the special methodological characteristics. It mostly depended on biology which, in turn, developed from the study of organic wholes. Sociology also shared this emphasis on organic unity with biology. If the society is divided into parts, sociology will fail to study it. The society can only be studied when it is treated as a whole consisting of various sub-parts. The parts of this whole are, however, treated by physical sciences better than by sociology.

Social Statics and Dynamics

According to Comte, sociology is a wide discipline. In order to study the discipline, he divided it into two parts. These are: social statics and social dynamics.

- Social statics: Social statics is concerned with the present structure of the society. It studies the current laws, rules and present condition of the society.
- Social dynamics: Social dynamics observed as to how the present social laws are affecting the society. It also evaluates the social structure. Social dynamics also studies the correlation between various social facts. Social statics is the distinction between two aspects of theory and not between two class of facts.

The distinction between social statics and dynamics is not between two class of facts but between two aspects of theory. These are akin to order and progress. Order helps maintain peace and harmony across a community while progress is the social development. Thus, these four aspects, statis, dynamics, order and progress are related to each other. Social statics analyses social statics analyses social statics analyses social statics. other. Social statics analyses social structure at a given moment. This helps in the understanding of the nature of social order. On the other hand, social dynamics describes the successive and necessary stages in the days and necessary stages in the days are single formally social dynamics describes the successive and necessary stages in the development of mind and society. Social dynamics is a science which discovere the laws of mind and society. dynamics is a science which discovers the laws and principles underlying social change and progress. It also tries to find out the condition and progress. It also tries to find out the conditions necessary to maintain the continuity of social progress. We have to study the rule and the ru of social progress. We have to study the rule and principle of social change in a historical nerspective. Comte maintained that the laws of perspective. Comte maintained that the laws of actions and reactions of the various sub-parts of a social system are analysed by a statical transfer and reactions of the various subparts of a social system are analysed by a statical study of sociology. Statics also studies the fundamental laws of progress that influence and reactions of the various the fundamental laws of progress that influence and study of sociology. Statics also studies the fundamental laws of progress that influence and modify social growth. It studies the relations between the constituent elements of relations between the constituent elements of a social infrastructure. There must always be a 'spontaneous harmony between the what be a 'spontaneous harmony between the whole and the parts of the social system'.

While analysing the component of the social system'. While analysing the component of the social system, Comte did not focus on individuals as elementary parts. He argues that science discourse as elementary parts. He argues that science discourages us to take society as constituting of individuals. Instead, we need to treat family 20 th of individuals. Instead, we need to treat family as the smallest unit, or at the most, a couple that forms the foundation of a society. Thus, for any the come couple that forms the foundation of a society. Thus, families gradually grow to become clans or tribes and then tribes grow into nation-states. Family is thus the basis of all other human associations, for these evolved from family as thus the basis of all other argues human associations, for these evolved from family and kinship groups. He also argues that the classes and castes which form the basic tissues. that the classes and castes which form the basic tissues of the social systems, cities and towns are the integral organs. Comte maintained that the towns are the integral organs. Comte maintained that the law of three stages and progress stay are theories constitute social dynamics. While the laws of coexistence in a society are examined by social statics, the rules of succession are studied by social dynamics. The two combine to fulfil the needs of study of the modern society. He assigned prime importance to religion and language as serving as the vessels wherein the culture, nature and thoughts of our ancestors are held. As we participate in the linguistic universe, we are part of a linguistic community. We relate to each other as we understand each other's language; without this collective tool, maintaining a social order is completely impossible.

In addition to a common language, a common religion is also essential to stabilize a social order. Religion permits men to love their fellow men and to overcome their egos. It is a strong bond that holds a society together in a common cult and common system of beliefs. Religion is the base of social order. The third factor that binds men is the division of labour. According to Comte, men who share the same type of labour, form a fraternity. The extent of this division of labour leads to social complexities and complications. The system of division of labour bonded people together as they were dependent on others for the completion of their work. On the other hand, this same system promoted and nurtured the growth of capitalism and materialism. Social institutions like religion, language and division of labour, according to Comte, are not important in their own accord; rather, the contributions of these institutions in furtherance of social development are more important for sociologists. The parts and the whole of a social system need to be connected harmoniously. Political institutions, social manners, laws and rules need to be consolidated in order to develop humanity.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 4. What do you understand by social dynamics?
- 5. State the distinction between social statics and dynamics.

SUMMARY

- · According to Comte, a stable social order rested on a consistent form of thought. He saw his own thought as leading to the establishment of a more stable, industrial order.
- Comte saw this relationship between thought and practice as a natural rather than a causal one and saw thought as evolving naturally toward the kind of philosophy which he was formulating and recommending.
- The subject matter of sociology is society. It studies the structure of the society and the set of rules governing its functions.
- Sociology tries to explore these principles which help society to stay integrated and in order. According to him it is highly important that the law of sociology should be scientific.
- The method of sociology includes observation as well as experimentation. Observation must be guided by a theory of social phenomena.
- · Each branch of knowledge passes through three stages, theological or fictitious, metaphysical or abstract, and scientific or positive.
- Social statics is concerned with the present structure of the society. It studies the current laws rule and present condition of the society.

UNIT 3 HERBERT SPENCER

Structure

- 3.0 Introduction
- 3.1 Unit Objectives
- 3.2 Social Darwinism
- 3.3 Evolution of State
 3.3.1 Organic Analogy
- 3.4 Summary
- 3.5 Key Terms
- 3.6 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'
- 3.7 Questions and Exercises
- 3.8 Further Reading

3.0 INTRODUCTION

Like Comte, Spencer saw in sociology the potential to unify the sciences, or to develop what he called a 'synthetic philosophy'. He believed that the natural laws discovered by natural scientists were not limited to natural phenomena; these laws revealed an underlying order to the universe that could explain natural and social phenomena alike.

According to Spencer's synthetic philosophy, the laws of nature applied to the organic realm as much as to the inorganic, and to the human mind as much as to the rest of creation. Even in his writings on ethics, he held that it was possible to discover laws of morality that had the same authority as laws of nature.

3.1 UNIT OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able to:

- Analyse the theory of social evolution and its stages as developed by Spencer
- Understand the concept of Social Darwinism
- Differentiate between military, industrial and ethical state
- Explain the concept of organic analogy
- Analyse Spencer's concept of society and individual

3.2 SOCIAL DARWINISM

Herbert Spencer was born in Derby, England on 27 April 1820. He was the only one of the nine children in his family to survive infancy. His father was a teacher of mathematics and science but, ironically, did not hold this institutional enterprise in very high esteem and, along with Spencer's uncle, taught the young Herbert at home. He thus received formal training only in mathematics and physics.

Given his scientific inclinations, Spencer procured a job as engineer for the London and Birmingham Railroad, eventually becoming its chief engineer but later resigning to edit a magazine called the *Economist*. His first major publication was an article in the

Nonconformist entitled 'The Proper Sphere of Government', a sphere which Spencer decided was extremely limited. In 1953 he gave up his job. In 1862, Spencer's first book, First Principles of a New System of Philosophy was published. In 1867 was published the multi-volume work called Principles of Biology. Another multi-volume work, Principles of Psychology, was published in 1872 followed by Principles of Sociology in 1896. His eight-volume study on descriptive sociology was published during 1873—1894. In 1873 was published his highly acclaimed book, The Study of Sociology.

Spencer believed that the knowledge of society is a science and can be achieved only by scientific methods. While analysing his theory of evolution, Spencer divided the Universe into two segments: Known and Unknown. The segment of Unknown relates to religion and its subject matter is God and Soul. The Unknown has nothing to do with science, it is beyond the realm of science and irrelevant to science. Science pertains to the segment called Known. According to Spencer, science also tries to explain the origin of the matter and understand the laws governing its evolution, growth and development. Spencer was of the view that the rules and laws governing evolution in the physical world also apply to society. In order to understand the law of social evolution, it is has characteristics of a science. The science of sociology is super organic. Society the science concerned exclusively with the phenomena resulting from the cooperation of citizens.

In fact, much of Spencer's thought is evolutionary in character. For Spencer, not only biological species or societies evolve, but all matter, being highly unstable in its simplest forms, tend to differentiate and become more complex. Spencer proposed a theory of general evolution, according to which matter passes from a relatively indefinite homogeneity to a relatively definite, coherent heterogeneity. Biological species tend to evolve in such a way as to become more complex (i.e., to differentiate internally, to have interrelated, specialized parts). This also holds true for individual species, similarly for In Spencer's scheme, there is a continuous evolution from militant to industrial societies. Militant societies, nearer to the beginning of the evolutionary process, were concerned with the production of goods.

The evolution of species or societies, for Spencer, is a matter of the 'survival of the fittest'. Darwin's term for this notion is 'natural selection', and he was later to suggest that he actually preferred Spencer's phrase. According to this notion, evolutionary a better, even morally perfect civilization. Since he viewed this process, for Spencer, is a natural process, he was adamant about his laissez-faire or non-intervention policy. Adaptation is key in this process; individuals or species should not, in his view, be helped in any way, lest a weak or unfit species continue to exist and thus weaken the whole. While species and societies evolved according to laws of their own, there is a supremely perfection of the social atom, the individual human.

Spencer's primary concern was the changes that evolution brought in the social states of mankind. Evolution is that 'change from a state of relatively definite, coherent, heterogeneity in definite, incoherent, that universal process, which explains alike both the 'earliest changes which the universe

at large is supposed to have undergone and those latest changes which we trace in society and products of social life'. Spencer maintained that the evolution of mankind and human societies were only a part of the natural law that could be applied to all living beings in this universe. Sociology can become a science only when it is based on the idea of natural, evolutionary law. 'There can be no complete acceptance of sociology as a science so long as the belief in a social order of conforming to natural law, survives.' He put forward the theory that like physical evolution, in social evolution also there is a movement from simple to complex. The society is gradually moving from homogenous structure to heterogeneous structure. Besides, society is also moving from indefinite state to definite state.

The progression from complex to simple is a part of universal change. This is manifested in geological, climatic, as well as organic changes on the Earth's surface. This universal phenomenon may be noticed in the growth of any individual organism, the culmination of all races coming together, or even the evolution of the basic social structure. The movement from simplicity to complexity is present in the evolution of the religious, political and economic aspects of the social progress. All concrete and abstract human activity bears witness to this universal movement.

The advance from the simple to the complex through a process of successive differentiations is seen alike in the earliest changes of the Universe. It is seen in the geologic and climatic evolution of the Earth; it is seen in the unfolding of every single organism on its surface; it is seen in the evolution of humanity, whether contemplated in the civilized individual, or in the aggregate of races; it is seen in the evolution of society in respect of its political, its religious and its economic organization; and it is seen in the evolution of all those endless concrete and abstract products of human activity.

According to Spencer, the theory of social evolution is divided into two stages. These are:

(i) The movement from simple to compound societies

This evolutionary stage is seen in the following four types of societies in terms of evolutionary levels; simple society, compound society, doubly compound society, triple compound society.

- (a) Simple societies: This is the most primitive society without any complexities and consisting of several families.
- (b) Compound societies: This society is basically a clan society, which means many simple societies make up this compound society.
- (c) Doubly compound societies: Through further aggregation of compound societies develops doubly compound society consisting of several clans compounded into tribes or tribal society.
- (d) Triple compound societies: In this society, tribes are organized into nation-states. This is the present form of the world.

(ii) Change from military to industrial society

This type of social structure depends on the relation of a society to other societies in its significant environment. While the military society is characterized by 'compulsory cooperation', industrial society is based upon 'voluntary cooperation'. Secondly, while the military society has a centralized government, the industrial society has a decentralized government. Thirdly, while the military society has economic autonomy it is not found in industrial society. The chief characteristic of military society is the *domination of*

State over all social organizations. In the industrial State, on the other hand, the functions of the State are limited. Most of the societies in the present time are industrial societies.

NOTES

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 1. What according to Darwin is 'natural selection'?
- 2. What are triple compound societies?

3.3 EVOLUTION OF STATE

According to Herbert Spencer, the origin of the State is based upon the element of *fear* among the individuals. The State is based upon the authority of powerful individuals. It evolves into three stages: (i) Military State, (ii) Industrial State and (iii) Ethical State.

- (i) Military State: In the formative period, when society was absolutely simple, indefinite and homogenous, there was no state authority. Various groups and lawlessness, some brave fighters were accepted as leaders whom others obeyed. However, since war was not occasional there was no permanent leader. Due to of the head was determined by paternity. Gradually, a committee was formed to nominated by the head or were the people's representatives. The main aim of the The armies were most important and the society was organized for their welfare. The State was to fight for self-defense as well as to conquer other States. The chief of the army was the king and head of the State. The State had all the were for the State. Therefore, there was no place for individual but individuals
- were for the State. Therefore, there was no place for individual but individual (ii) Industrial State: The second stage in evolution was the Industrial State. Man understood that in industrial progress lies his economic industrial progress. Therefore, the State gradually attended to the progress of the industrial progress. State, the aim of which was the progress of industries. This led aimed at victory in wars, the Industrial State did not aim at it. It gave more state in the life of the individual gradually decreased. The representatives of the principles evolved and the State became concerned with the life of the individual gradually, democratic
- principles evolved and the State became concerned with general welfare.

 (iii) Ethical State: While Military State and Industrial State have been realized, Spencer's concept of Ethical State belongs to the future. This concept is imaginary. According to Spencer, the completion of the evolution of Industrial State will behaviour is due to material richness of the people. This will satisfy the selfish ethical State will be a reality. In fact, there will be no State, the State will wither himself. According to Spencer, human society is gradually evolving to this state.

Herbert Spencer's theoretical idea of organic analogy was influenced by biology. His initial connection to biology helped him draw an analogy between the society and the biological organism. According to him, societies are akin to living bodies. As germs originate from a minuscule organism, similarly, societies also grow and evolve. He also argues that society is made up of organized systems, just like an organism; the same definition of life applies to both society and biology. Only when we witness the growth, maturity and decay of a society and the transformations passed through by aggregates of all orders, inorganic and organic, is there reached the concept of sociology as science.

The social structure is a living organism. It is made up of parts which can be distinguished but which cannot survive or exist except within the framework of society. Spencer wanted to explain clearly the nature of social structure by the help of this theory. He believes that all individuals lose their individuality and become a part of the society. On the other hand, he is also an individualist, a firm advocate of the independence and rights of the individual. He only tried to point out certain striking similarities between the individual living organism and society on account of which the individual may be regarded as microcosmic society and society as macrocosmic individual. He argues:

It is also the character of social bodies, as of loving bodies, that while they increase in size they increase in structure. Like a low animal, the embryo of a high one has few distinguishable parts; but while it acquires greater mass, its parts multiply and differentiate. It is thus with a society. At initial stage the unlikeness among its groups of units are inconspicuous in number and degree, but as population augments, divisions and subdivisions become more numerous and more decided. Further, in the social organism as in the individual organism, differentiation ceases only with that completion of the type which marks maturity and precede decay.

Spencer drew a comparison between the society and individual thus:

- (i) Different from inanimate bodies: The first similarity between a living organism and society is their difference from inanimate bodies. None of them is inanimate. In inanimate objects, there is no growth and development, but on the other hand, there is continuous growth and development in both society and living organism. Thus, on account of their common difference from the inanimate bodies, society and living organism may be regarded to be similar.
- (ii) Increase in quantity leads to change in structure: The second similarity in society and living organism is that increase of quantity in both leads to change in their structure. According to Spencer, living organism starts from being a unicellular creature; with the increase in cells, differentiation of organs results. At the higher level of evolution, the structure of the body becomes quite complex. Similar is the case with society. In the beginning, the structure of society is very simple. At this level each individual does all the work by himself and there is no differentiation of functions. Each man himself is a craftsman, hunter, sculptor, etc. But with the quantitative increase in society, the structure of society becomes increasingly complex and there is increasing differentiation of functions in society. Like the organism of the organism, the functions in society become specialized.

NOTES

- (iii) Change in structure leads to change in functions: With the change in the structure in organisms and communities, there results a change in their functions. The functions become more and more sophisticated and specialized.
- (iv) Differentiation as well as harmony of organs: While it is true that with the evolution there develops greater differentiation in the organs of society as also that of an individual, but along with this, there is also harmony between various organs. Each organ is complementary to the other and not opposed. This holds true both for the body of a living organism and society.
- (v) Loss of an organ does not necessarily result in the loss of organism: The society as well as individual is an organism. It is a fact common for both that a loss of some organs does not necessarily result in the death of an organism. If an individual loses his hand, it is not necessary that this may result in his death. Similarly, in the case of society, loss of a particular association does not necessarily mean death of the society.
- (vi) Similar processes and method of organization: There is another similarity between the society and the living organism. According to Spencer, there are various systems in an organism responsible for its efficient functioning.

Similarly, in a society, transport system, production and distribution systems, etc., fulfil their respective roles.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 3. State the three stages of the evolution of State.
- 4. State one similarity between a living organism and society.

SUMMARY

- Social dynamics observed as to how the present social laws are affecting the society. It also evaluates the social structure.

 | Control of the control society. It also evaluates the social structure. Social statics also study the correlation between various social facts.
- Spencer believed that the knowledge of society is a science and can be achieved only by scientific method. While analysis a science and can be achieved only by scientific method. While analysing his theory of evolution, Spencer has
- divided the Universe into two segments: Known and Unknown. • Spencer was of the view that the rules and laws governing evolution in the physical world also apply to society. In order to under the rules and laws governing evolution it is world also apply to society. In order to understand the law of social evolution it is necessary to understand the laws of physical
- necessary to understand the laws of physical evolution. • Spencer believed that society has characteristics of a science. The science of phenomena resulting 6. Society is the science.
- sociology is super organic. Society has characteristics of a science. The science phenomena resulting from the cooperation of a science exclusively with the phenomena resulting from the cooperation of citizens. Spencer proposed the theory of general evolution, according to which matter coherent heterogeneit.

 Spencer proposed the theory of general evolution, according to which matter coherent heterogeneit.

 Spencer proposed the theory of general evolution, according to which matter coherent heterogeneit.

 Spencer proposed the theory of general evolution, according to which matter coherent heterogeneit.
- passes from a relatively indefinite, incoherent homogeneity to a relatively definite, Spencer's first and foremost concern was evolutionary changes in social structures
 and social institutions, rather than with the attendance of the structures. and social institutions, rather than with the attendant mental states.

- The society is gradually moving form homogenous structure to heterogeneous structure.
- According to Spencer the theory of social evolution divided into two stages—the movement from simple to compound societies, and change from military to industrial society.
- · According to Spencer, the social structure is a living organism. It is made up of parts which can be distinguished but which cannot survive or exist except within the frame work of society.

3.5 KEY TERMS

- Simple societies: Primitive society without any complexities and consisting of several families.
- Compound societies: Many simple societies make up a compound society.
- Doubly compound societies: Through further aggregation of compound societies develops doubly compound society consisting of several clans compounded into tribes or tribal society.
- Organic analogy: Theory that holds that societies are akin to living organisms.

ANSWERS TO 'CHECK YOUR PROGRESS'

- 1. The evolution of species or societies, for Spencer, is a matter of the 'survival of the fittest'. Darwin's term for this notion is 'natural selection', and he was later to suggest that he actually preferred Spencer's phrase. According to this notion, evolutionary processes filter out unfit species.
- 2. In triple compound societies, tribes are organized into nation-states. This is the present form of the world.
- 3. The State is based upon the authority of powerful individuals. It evolves into three stages: (i) Military State, (ii) Industrial State and (iii) Ethical State.
- 4. The first similarity between a living organism and society is their difference from inanimate bodies. None of them is inanimate. In inanimate objects, there is no growth and development, but on the other hand, there is continuous growth and development in both society and living organism.

3.7 QUESTIONS AND EXERCISES

Short-Answer Questions

- 1. List two of Spencer's famous works.
- 2. Why did Spencer use the term 'survival of the fittest' in relation to sociology?
- 3. What are the stages of the social evolution theory?
- 4. Write a short note on the Military State.
- 5. Why is Spencer's Ethical State imaginary?

- 1. Elaborate on the theory of organic analogy.
- 2. Discuss Spencer's idea of social evolution.
- 3. How has Spenser differentiated between society and individual? Discuss.
- 4. Write a descriptive note on 'Social Darwinism'.

FURTHER READING

Abraham Francis M. and John Henry Morgan. 1985. Sociological Thought. Chennai:

Aron, Raymond. 1965. Main Current in Sociological Thought. Vol. I and II, Meddlesex:

Comte, A. 1912. The Positive Philosophy, Fourth edition, Vol. 4. Paris.

Comte, A. 1875. Positive Polity, translated by Frederic Harrison et al., London.

Spencer, H. 1925. Principle of Sociology, Vol. II, and III. New York: D. Appleton.

Self-Instructional Material

UNIT 4 EMILE DURKHEIM

Structure

- 4.0 Introduction
- 4.1 Unit Objectives
- 4.2 Emile Durkheim and Sociological Theories
 - 4.2.1 Mechanical and Organic Solidarity and Social Fact
 - 4.2.2 Theory of Suicide
- 4.3 Sociology of Religion
- 4.4 Summary
- 4.5 Key Terms
- 4.6 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'
- 4.7 Ouestions and Exercises
- 4.8 Further Reading

INTRODUCTION

Emile Durkheim offered a more coherent theory than any of the other sociological theorists. He articulated the concepts in a rather clear, theoretically oriented manner and used it in a variety of specific works. Supporters would say that the clarity in Durkheim's thinking stems from this coherence, whereas detractors might contend that the clarity is the result of the comparative simplicity of his theory. Whatever the case, it is certainly easier to realize the real essence of Durkheim's thinking than that of other classical theorists.

The heart of Durkheim's theory lies in his concept of social fact. Durkheim differentiated between the two basic types of social facts — material and non-material. Although both of these occupied a place of causal priority in his theorizing, material social facts (for example, division of labour, dynamic density and law) were not the most important large-scale forces in Durkheim's theoretical system. His main focus was on non-material social facts. He dealt with a number of them, including collective conscience, collective representations and social currents.

Durkheim's study of suicide is a good illustration of the significance of non-material social facts in his work. In his basic causal model, changes in non-material social facts ultimately cause differences in suicide rates. Durkheim differentiated among four types of suicide — egoistic, altruistic, anomic and fatalistic — and showed how each is affected by different changes in social currents. The study of suicide was taken by Durkheim and his supporters as the evidence that sociology has a legitimate place in the social sciences. After all, it was argued, if sociology could explain an act as suicide as individualistic, then it certainly could be used to explain other, less individual aspects of social life.

In his later work, Durkheim focused on another aspect of culture, called 'religion'. In his analysis of primitive religion, Durkheim sought to show the roots of religion in the social structure of society. It is society that defines certain things as sacred and others as profane. Durkheim demonstrated the social sources of religion in his analysis of primitive totemism and its roots in all social structures of the clan. Furthermore, totemism Was seen as a specific form of the collective conscience manifested in a primitive society.

NOTES

Its source, as well as the source of all collective products, lies in the process of collective effervescence. In the end, Durkheim argued that religion and society are one and the same — two manifestations of the same general process.

Since he identified society with God, and also because he deified society, Durkheim did not urge for a social revolution. Instead, he should be seen as a social reformer interested in improving the way the society functions. Whereas Marx saw irreconcilable differences between capitalist and workers, Durkheim believed that these groups could be united in occupational associations. He urged that these associations should be set up to restore collective morality in the modern world and to cope with some of the curable pathologies of the modern division of labour. However in the end, such narrow, structural reforms could not really come up with the broader cultural problem that plagues the modern world. Here, Durkheim invested some hope in the curious modern system of collective morality that he labelled as the 'cult of the individual'.

UNIT OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able to:

- Assess Emile Durkheim's contribution to the growth and evolution of sociological
 theories
- Analyse sociology as a science
- Describe the division of labour and forms of solidarity
- Evaluate Durkheim's study of suicide
- Explain Durkheim's theory of religion
- Discuss Durkheim's system of classification

EMILE DURKHEIM AND SOCIOLOGICAL

Emile Durkheim was born on 15 April 1858 in Epinal, France. He was the descendent of a long line of rabbis, and himself studied to be a long line. a long line of rabbis, and himself studied to be a rabbi. However, by the time he was in his teens, he rejected his heritage and became his teens, he rejected his heritage and became an agnostic. From now onwards, his lifelong interest in religion was academic instead lifelong interest in religion was academic instead of theological. He was not satisfied with his religious training. The same was the core with his religious training. The same was the case with his general education and its focus on literary and aesthetic matters. He wanted call the same was the case with his general education and its ade and in focus on literary and aesthetic matters. He wanted schooling in scientific methods and in the moral principles required to direct the social lie. the moral principles required to direct the social life. He did not opt for a traditional academic career in philosophy, and instead strived. academic career in philosophy, and instead, strived to acquire the scientific training for contributing to the moral guidance of society. Except contributing to the moral guidance of society. Even though he was interested in scientific raining sociology, there were no specific fields of sociology. sociology, there were no specific fields of sociology at that time. So between 1882 and 1887, he taught philosophy in a number of provincial schools.

His appetite for science was whetted further by a trip to Germany, where he was used to the scientific psychology being pionagand a trip to Germany, where he was the trip to Germany. exposed to the scientific psychology being pioneered by Wilhelm Wundt. In the years immediately after his visit to Germany, Durkheim published a good deal of works, basing his concepts, in part, on his experience there. The his concepts, in part, on his experience there. These publications helped him gain a position in the department of philosophy at the University to the limit to t position in the department of philosophy at the University of Bordeaux in 1887. There

This was a Durkheim taught the first course in social science in a French university. This was a

particularly impressive accomplishment because only a decade earlier, a furore had erupted in a French university by the mentioned Auguste Comte due to a student dissertation. Durkheim's main responsibility, however, was the teaching of courses in education to school teachers, and his most important course was the area of moral education. His goal was to communicate a moral system to the educators who he hoped would then pass it to young people in an effort to help reverse the moral degeneration he saw around him in the French society.

The years that followed were characterized by a series of personal successes for Durkheim. In 1893, he published his French doctoral thesis, The Division of Labour in Society, as well as a thesis on Montesquieu. His major methodological statement, The Rules of Sociological Method appeared in 1895, followed (in 1897) by his empirical application of those methods in the study Suicide. By 1896, he had become a full professor at Bordeaux. In 1902, he was called to the famous French university, the Sorbonne, and in 1906 he was named as 'the professor of the science of education', a title which was changed in 1913 to 'professor of the science of education and sociology'. His other famous work, The Elementary Forms of Religious Life, was published in 1912.

Presently, Durkheim is most often thought of as a political conservative, and his influence within sociology certainly has been a conservative one. However during his time, he was considered as a liberal. This was exemplified by the active public role he played in the defence of Alfred Dreyfus, and Jewish army captain whose court-martial for treason was felt by many to be anti-Semitic.

Durkheim was deeply offended by the Dreyfus affair, particularly its anti-Semitism. However, Durkheim did not attribute this anti-Semitism to racism among the French people. Characteristically, he saw it as a symptom of the moral sickness confronting French society as a whole. He made the following remark:

'When society undergoes suffering, it feels the need to find someone whom it can hold responsible for its sickness, on whom it can avenge its misfortunes; and those against whom public opinion already discriminates are naturally designated for this role. These are in pariahs who serve as expiatory victims. What confirms me in this interpretation is the way in which the result of Dreyfus's trial was greeted in 1894. There was a surge of joy in the boulevards. People celebrated as a triumph what should have been a cause for public mourning. At least they knew whom to blame for the charge: economic troubles and moral distress in which they lived. The trouble came from the Jews. The charge had been officially proved. By this very fact alone, things already seemed to be getting better and people felt consoled.'

Thus, Durkheim's interest in the Dreyfus affair stemmed from his deep and lifelong interest in morality and the moral crisis confronting modern society. To Durkheim, the answer to the Dreyfus affair and crises like it lay in ending the moral disorder in society. Since it could not be done quickly or easily, Durkheim suggested government efforts to show the public how it is being misled. He urged people to 'have the courage to proclaim aloud what they think, and to unite together in order to achieve victory in the struggle against public madness' (Lukes, 1972; p. 347).

'Durkheim's (1928/1962) interest in socialism is also taken as evidence against the idea that he was a conservative, but his kind of socialism was very different from the

kind that an out of date hypotheses' (Lukes, 1972; 323). To Durkheim, socialism represented a movement aimed at the moral regeneration of society through scientific morality; and he was not interested in short-term political methods or the economic aspects of socialism. He did not see the proletariat as the salvation of society, and he was greatly opposed to agitation or violence. Socialism for Durkheim was very different from what we usually think of as socialism; it simply represented a system in which the moral principles discovered by scientific sociology were to be applied.'

Durkheim, as we will see throughout this unit, had a profound influence on the development of sociology, but his influence was not restricted to only that. Much of his impact on other fields came through the journal L'Annee Sociologique, which he founded in 1898. An intellectual circle arose around the journal with Durkheim at its centre. Through it, he and his ideas influenced such fields as anthropology, history, linguistics and — somewhat ironically, considering his early attacks on the field — psychology.

Durkheim died on 15 November 1917, as a celebrated figure in French intellectual circles. However, it was not until over twenty years later, with the publication of Talcott Parsons' The Structure of Social Action (1937), that his work became a significant

Sociology as a Science

Durkheim's sociology has a very sound foundation, based on definite epistemology.

Durkheim was a French sociologist when the career, Durkheim, was a French sociologist whose efforts and intellect, throughout his career, were mainly directed at building a sociological science with a stable epistemological foundation. The two principles that can be a science with a stable epistemological foundation. The two principles that can be clearly seen in Durkheim's sociology are as

- Sociology must be a science which has a methodology similar to the physicalnatural sciences, that is, based on position.
- The positivist science of society goes against philosophy and psychology.

Durkheim considered the newly developed positivism of Auguste Comte, one of punders of sociology, as a model of sociology. the founders of sociology, as a model of 'science'. Clearly he had a strong influence on Durkheim's sociology. Remember, Comte's thought a strong influence on assign of Durkheim's sociology. Remember, Comte's thought favoured a positive progression of all the sciences whose last stage will be sociology. all the sciences whose last stage will be sociology (which he initially referred to as social physics). He called sociology the most sophisticated physics). He called sociology the most sophisticated positive science, because its study integrated in humanity all the contributions made by earlier sciences.

Durkheim's assumption was that the science dealt with 'things' instead of 'ideas' oncepts'. Therefore, his initial point is generally at the science dealt with 'things' instead of 'ideas' information'. or 'concepts'. Therefore, his initial point is generally the sensation, sensitive information

Since it is for the sensation for which is given us the exterior of the things, it therefore can be said in short: science, in order to be objective, it should start, not from concentrations. it should start, not from concepts that have been formed without her, but from sensation. It is of the sensitive data of those that it should take

This very positivism lead to the construction of Durkheim's most popular hings'. The term 'thing' considered epistemological 'rules' (regles)—the rule that social facts (faits) should be considered indeed, all what is given all or Durkheim was mural. as 'things'. The term 'thing' for Durkheim was purely realistic. He felt that 'It is a thing' that I is a th indeed, all what is given, all what offers or, rather, it is imposed to the observation. To treat the phenomena like things, it is to treat them in quality of data that constitute the starting point of science.' Therefore, according to Durkheim, 'thing' has no 'material' meaning as may have been the usual connotation because sociology should be aimed at doing away with 'preconceived ideas'. Sociology should deviate from sociological idealism, away from the analysis of apriori ideas considered to be the starting point of research and according to which needs are required to be adjusted to reality. Although 'thing' was ambiguous, Durkhiem was sure of its goals, which were as follows:

- 1. To ensure that sociology was objective and scientific and followed the positivist paradigm of the physical-natural sciences. Like physics and astronomy, Sociology takes into consideration a limited number of facts, as the subject matter of study for its researchers. Therefore, it does not study illusions or speculations.
- 2. The word 'thing' becomes clear from the fact that the sociologist reaches a socially and historically constructed reality, which is imposed on people. The social reality is constructed, for sure, but becomes a concrete reality, which forces or restricts us. It is the real meaning of 'thing', that is, a social fact, which, despite being a creation of human beings, comes to them as a given and requires a sociologist to merely scrutinize, describe and explain it. From a methodological perspective, the most important thing Durkheim feels is that sociology, like other sciences, relies on 'observation'. Therefore, the social facts, or 'things', have a dual quality - 'They are external to the individual and have a coercive character over him.'

Durkheim aimed to preserve philosophy in the secondary education, for which he wished philosophy could be a lot more than merely abstract literature (littérature abstraite). It wasn't enough for philosophy to be a mere rhetoric based on an artist's talent. He wanted philosophy to be a lot more scientific by diverging from deductions based on metaphysics. In fact, what guided his epistemology was the rejection of metaphysics, which would become clearer in the study of religion, denying the supernatural emphatically. He disagrees with philosophy so that sociology could stop being an ambiguous social philosophy aimed at rendering a positivist consistency to the study of social facts.

Being apprehensive about the ground of morality, Durkheim presumed a social reality which played an important role of being the moral ground like Kant who introduced God as the 'postulate of practical reason'.

The individual considers social facts to be not just external but also coercive because they are born from society, not from him or his authority. It originates as a sui generis reality. Although Durkheim does not deny that society is made up of people: 'truly, society has a 'substratum' in the form of individuals but is not reduced to them'. 'If it is possible to say, in certain way, that the collective representations are exterior to the individual consciences, it is because they do not derive from isolate individuals, but of his grouping; what is very different.' He uses the model of chemical synthesis to explain his thesis. This does not get reduced to the sum of its constituent elements but gives new properties to the parts or components that make it up.

Sociologism conflicts with Gabriel Tarde's views that limited sociology to the study of the individual consciences, and restricted collective behaviour to the social contagion through imitation. Durkheim wanted sociology to comprise preper subject matter, which was not the same as psychology. He introduced his theory of society as sui generis reality. Therefore, he was the creator of the social facts which sociology studies.

4.2.1 Mechanical and Organic Solidarity and Social Fact

NOTES

The first major book of Durkheim, De la division du travail social, was also his doctoral thesis. He was deeply influenced by the theories of Auguste Comte. Not surprisingly, the relationship or link between the individual and the collective forms the theme of the book. Through this book, Durkheim wishes to find out, 'how can a multiplicity of individuals achieve what is the condition of social existence, namely a consensus?'

Durkheim's reply is that it is through the distinction between mechanical solidarity and organic solidarity. The main feature of 'mechanical solidarity' is resemblance. Durkheim feels that there is hardly any difference between individuals in a mechanical solidarity-based society. The members of this solidarity, not only experience the same emotions, they also treasure the same values and consider the same things sacred. Therefore, they resemble each other.

On the other hand, organic solidarity, is characterized by consensus on the coherent unity of the collectivity, which takes place by expressing differentiation. Here, the individuals differ from each other, and this difference is the reason for the consensus. Durkheim calls the solidarity based on the differentiation of individuals, 'organic' solidarity because it compares living organisms. For instance, there is a vast difference between the heart and the lungs but both are essential for an organism to function properly.

Durkheim felt that in the two forms of solidarity, the societies called primitive during Durkheim's time are today those where mechanical solidarity is predominant. From the historical point of view, since the people of a tribe can be interchanged, the a person about himself is born of the historical development of the collective self. In consciousness, collective feelings predominate in terms of number and intensity.

According to Durkheim, a segment resembles a social group wherein the individual isolated, leading its own life. Mechanical solidarity of resemblance is the primary feature of the segment. It is not only self-sufficient but separated from the outside world with hardly any communication. Segmental organization is a contradiction of the phenomena possible for a segmental structure to exist, with an extremely advanced form of economic

In continuation of local autonomies, and in the force of custom, the idea of segmental of tradition. The concept of segmental structure is not identified with solidarity of resemblance. It only implies the power elements. In other words, a full society is like a combination and self-sufficiency of a several independent groups, under perhaps one powerful central authority, lacking the unity of function characteristic of organic solidarity one powerful central authority, lacking the unity of function characteristic of organic solidarity operation.

function characteristic of organic solidarity operating on the level of the whole society.

It is very important to note here that Durkheim's division of labour as defined by economists. The demarcation of precedence according to Durkheim. The beginning of social differentiation which took fall of mechanical solidarity and segmental structures.

Durkheim believed that collective consciousness is 'the body of beliefs and sentiments common to the average members of a society'. These beliefs and sentiments have an existence of their own. However, the collective consciousness requiring an individual's sentiments and beliefs to continue, is logically separate from individual consciousness. The development of collective consciousness takes place according to its own set of rules and laws and is not merely the expression or the outcome of individual consciousness.

There are different levels of collective consciousness in different social orders. According to Durkheim, wherever societies are dominated by mechanical solidarity, the greater part of individual consciousness is adopted by the collective consciousness. In such situations, a major share of existence is governed by social imperatives and prohibitions. Durkheim suggested that these prohibitions and social imperatives should not be embraced by the members of a society based on mechanical solidarity, on their own or of their own accord. Instead, these are imposed on the majority. An individual gives in to such imperatives just as he would to a higher authority. The force of this collective consciousness coincides with its degree. In primitive societies, there exists a resentment against crime as well as collective consciousness. Each act of social existence. such as religious rites, is characterized by a deep level of accuracy. The details of what ought to be done and thought, are imposed by the collective consciousness on individual members. On the contrary, Durkheim says that in societies characterized by the difference between individuals, more often than not, each individual is free to believe, to want and to act as he wishes. For Durkheim, organic solidarity probably meant a loosening of the hold that collective consciousness has on the sphere of existence; a reduction in collective reaction against the imposed prohibitions, and most of all, scope for individual analysis of social imperative.

You can comprehend Durkheim's suggestions with the following example. In a primitive society, the demands of justice will be determined accurately by collective sentiments. In societies characterized by division of labour, the demands of justice will be formulated by the collective consciousness in a general manner and only in a concept. In the first example, justice implies that a given person receives a given thing. In the second example, what justice demands is that each one receives his due. This 'due' comprises several probable things, which are not really free in the true sense of the word nor are they unambiguously fixed.

Durkheim proposed a thought which was the core of his entire sociology. For him, an individual is born of society, and not the other way round. The historical priority of societies in which the individuals resemble one another, are so to speak lost in the whole, over societies whose members have acquired both awareness in their individuality and the capability to express it. Collectivist societies, societies in which each one resembles everyone else, come first in time. From this historical priority, there results a rationale of priority in the justification of social phenomena. The division of labour is seen by many as the gain made by individuals by dividing the task so as to increase the volume produced of the collectivity. However, this clarification as an understanding of individual behaviour is considered by Durkheim as a reversal of a true order. By believing that men divided work between themselves, and assigned each individual a task of his own so as to increase the collective output and its usefulness, one is presuming that each individual is different and also conscious of his difference before social differentiation. If Durkheim's historical idea is true, their awareness of individuality could not last before organic solidarity and the division of labour. Therefore, it is Durkheim's belief that the rational pursuit of increased output cannot offer an explanation for social differentiation, as this pursuit

NOTES

presumes that very social differentiation which it is expected to explain. The outline of Durkheim's central idea, which he uses as a base to define sociology was the priority of the whole over the parts. He believed that the social entity was not reducible to the sum of its elements.

When he analysed the concept of division of labour, Durkheim found two prominent ideas (i) the historical priority of societies where individual consciousness is wholly outside itself, and the collectivity, and not the state of the collectivity by individual phenomena. (ii) The division of labour talked about by Durkheim is an arrangement of the society as a whole, which is expressed technically or economically as division of labour. If you without any bias, as an outsider. You must identify the technique that will help you not in a direct way. Durkheim investigates these expressions of the phenomena of repressive law and cooperative law. The former offers punishment to offenders and violating social rules but promotes restoration of things to order when an offence has been committed. It promotes organization of cooperation among individuals.

According to Durkheim, in societies dominated by mechanical solidarity, repressive revels the force of widespread sentiments, their scope and their particularization. With Durkheim, crime implies progression of a prohibition. In the sociological sense, a crime that this act may appear to be innocent in the eyes of observers from different societies of crime in terms of the condition of the collective consciousness forbids or prohibits. It is immaterial or centuries after the event. In a sociological study, there can only be an external definition society. This is the prototype of the objective and therefore of the relativists' definition of in relation to God or to our conception of justice. The criminal is merely the individual consideration of Socrates as a criminal rather just

Following the theory of crime, Durkheim went on to explain the theory of punishment. He rejected the classic explanations of punishments is to check the guilty act and stop it from occurring again. It is Durkheim's to render satisfaction to the common consciousness. For Durkheim, an act committed needs to be compensated. The compensation comes in the form of punishment could be considered rather accurate.

The second line of crime, Durkheim went on to explain the theory of punishment wherein the function of to render satisfaction to the guilty act and stop it from occurring again. It is Durkheim's by an individual member of the collective of scare. Instead, the rationale is needs to be compensated. The collective of standard the collective consciousness, which punishment could be considered rather accurate.

The second kind of law is the one Durkheim usually refers to as restitutive. point is no longer to punish, but to re-establish the condition of things as it should have this restitutive law, of which commercial law is an example, is not the only type of law to bring upon cooperation among individuals, administrative law and constitutional law

which belong to the same token to the group of cooperative legislation. They are less the expression of the sentiments common to a collectivity than the organization of regular and ordered co-existence among individuals who are already differentiated.

Modern society is not based on agreement anymore than the division of labour is explained by the rational decision of individual to increase the common productivity by dividing the tasks among them. If modern society were a contractualist society, then it would explain in terms of individual behaviour, and it is exactly the opposite of what Durkheim desires to show. While opposing contractualists like Spencer, as well as the economists. Durkheim does not reject that in modern societies, an increasing responsibility is indeed played by contracts freely accomplished among individuals. However, this contractual agreement is a derivative of the arrangement of the society and a derivative of the state of the collective consciousness in the modern society. In order for an increasingly wider sphere to exist in which individuals may freely reach agreement between themselves, the society must first of all have a legal structure which authorizes free choice on the part of individuals. In other words, inter-individual contracts take place within a social background which is not determined by the persons themselves. It is the division of labour by differentiation which is the original condition for the existence of the sphere of agreement. Contracts are accomplished between individuals, but the order and set of laws according to which these agreements are concluded are determined by the legislation which in turn expresses the idea shared by the whole society of the just and the unjust, the permissible and the prohibited.

The society in which the organic type of solidarity exists is not defined by the replacement of agreement for community. Nor is the modern society defined by the substitution of the industrial type for the military type. Modern society is defined first and foremost by the phenomenon of social demarcation of which contractualism is the result. Now we must look for the reason of the phenomenon we are studying, the reason of the organic solidarity or of social differentiation seen as an arrangement, characteristic of modern societies. It is not a priori, and it may even be unsightly that one can indeed find the reason of the phenomenon which is not simple and isolable, but which is rather an aspect of the whole of society. Durkheim, however, wants to decide the reason of phenomenon through which he has examined the growth of the division of labour in modern societies.

As we have seen, we are dealing here with a basically social phenomenon. When the phenomenon to be explained is essentially social, the reason, in harmony with the principal of homogeneity of cause and effect, also ought to be social. Thus, we do away with the individualist explanation. Curiously, Durkheim gets rid of an explanation which Comte had also considered as eliminated, i.e., the explanation whereby the vital factor in social growth was held to be boredom, or the effort to overcome or avoid boredom. He also discusses the search for happiness as an explanation, for, he says, nothing proves that men in modern societies are happier than men in archaic societies.

The division of labour cannot be explained by boredom or by the pursuit of happiness or by the increase of pleasure or by the wish to increase the productivity of collective labour. The division of collective labour, being a social phenomenon, can only be explained by another social phenomenon as a mixture of the quantity, the material density and moral density of the society.

The quantity of a society is simply the number of individuals belonging to a particular collectivity. However, only quantity is not the basis of social differentiation. In order for quantity — increase in number — to bring about differentiation, there must also be both

NOTES

material and moral density. Density in the material sense is the number of individuals on a particular ground surface. Moral density, it seems, is approximately the intensity of communication between individuals, i.e., the intensity of interaction. The extra communication there is between individuals, the extra they work together, the extra trade or competition they have with one another, the greater the density together; and in this way, social differentiation will result.

Durkheim describes an idea made fashionable by Darwin in the second half of the nineteenth century — the fight for survival. Why does the growing amount of interaction between individuals, itself created by material density, produce social differentiation? This is so because the more individuals are trying to live together, the more intense the struggle for survival becomes. Social demarcation is, so to speak, the peaceful way out to the fight for survival. Instead of somebody getting eliminated so that others may survive, as in the animal kingdom, social differentiation enables a greater number of individuals to survive by differentiation. Each man ceases to be in rivalry with all, each man is only in opposition with a few of his fellows. Each man is in a position to inhabit his place, to play his role, to execute visuals once they are no longer alike but different, each contributing on his own unusual manner to the survival of all.

This type of explanation is in keeping with what Durkheim considered to be a tenet of the sociological method - the clarification of a social phenomenon by another social phenomenon, rather than the institution of a social phenomenon by another social phenomenon, rather than the justification of a social phenomenon by individual phenomena.

4.2.2 Theory of Suicide

Durkheim's best known book is about his study of suicide. His aim in this book was not only to provide an account of suicide but also to the suicide b only to provide an account of suicide, but also to illustrate how his methodology could be applied to even the most individual of acts. Described to what applied to even the most individual of acts. Durkheim in this book showed as to what extent the individual actions are determined. extent the individual actions are determined by the collective reality. Durkheim of one's life demonstrated that the taking of one's life, apparently the most individual and personal of acts, was socially patterned. He showed that socially the most individual and personal of individual acts, was socially patterned. He showed that social forces existing outside the individual shaped the likelihood that a person would commit suicide.

We can define suicide as a positive or negative act performed by the victim elf and which strives to produce a result at a confident. himself and which strives to produce a result directly or indirectly in the form of death.

An example of a 'positive act' would be to at the strip to hang. An example of a 'positive act' would be to shoot oneself in the temple or to hang oneself. And an example to show that suicide is continued in the temple or to hang the shoot oneself in the temple or to hang the shoot oneself in the temple or to hang the shoot oneself in the temple or to hang the shoot oneself in the temple or to hang the shoot oneself in the temple or to have the shoot oneself in the temple or to have the shoot oneself in the temple or to have the shoot oneself. oneself. And an example to show that suicide is committed in a negative act would be to remain in a burning building or to refuse all possess. remain in a burning building or to refuse all nourishment so as to starve oneself to death.

According to Durkheim's definition, we can also as to starve oneself to death. According to Durkheim's definition, we can also take an example of a hunger strike carried out until death as suicide. The distinction between directly and indirectly corresponds to the comparison between positive and negative. Death is produced directly deliberately and indirectly deliberately delib if a gunshot is put in the temple; but if someone refuses to eat anything or if someone about the deliberately stays in a burning building, then these negative acts would bring about the desired result, i.e., death, indirectly or in the near future.

The study of suicide deals both with a pathological aspect of the modern societies are collectivity. Individual and with a phenomenon illuminating in the most striking way the relation of the individual hyperstriking way the relation of the individual striking way the relation way the striking way the relation of the individual striking way the relatio to the collectivity. Individuals are determined by the collective reality as anxiously shown since the fact of taking analysis are low being related by the collective reality as anxiously shown and of suicide, by Durkheim. An extraordinary force is now being related to this phenomenon of suicide.

According to Durkheim if here. since the fact of taking one's own life is considered to this phenomenon of suice then he would have proved it and out that the society is abenomenon, able According to Durkheim, if he found out that the society is governed by this phenomenon, then he would have proved it with the truth of his our that the society is governed by this phenomenon, then he would have proved it with the truth of his own thesis by the very case unfavourable

to it. Durkheim says that it is the society which governs the solitary act of a desperate individual who wants to end his life at any cost. The concept of suicide is not only recognized as such, but taking an example of an officer who lets himself be blown up rather than surrender can be considered as a suicide. Suicide can be regarded as an instance of voluntary death surrounded by glory and the aura of heroism.

The suicide rate is relatively constant when its frequency is studied in a given population. And this characteristic can be found in a region, or a province, or a whole society. According to Durkheim's analysis, suicide rate can be termed as a social phenomenon. The distinction between relation of the social phenomenon (the suicide rates) and the individual phenomenon (suicide) is the most important thing from the point of view of theory.

Psychological explanation is dismissed by Durkheim. However, he says that there is psychological predisposition to suicide, and this predisposition can be explained in psychological or psychopathological terms. Individuals suffering from brain disorders are more likely to kill themselves under certain given circumstances. Nonetheless, it is the social force that determines the suicide, not psychological forces as said by Durkheim. The distinction must be considered carefully between social determination and psychological predisposition. The scientific discussion will focus on these two terms.

To prove the formula of psychological predisposition and sociological determination. classical method of concomitant variations is used by Durkheim. He also tries to prove that there is no correlation between the frequency of psychopathological states and that of suicides, and he also examines certain variations in the suicide rate in different populations. No correlation is found between the hereditary tendencies and the suicide rate. The hypothesis that the efficient cause of suicide is transmitted by heredity can hardly be compared with the increase in the percentage of suicides with age. Interpretation of cases of suicide in the same family can be denied in this way. Nonetheless, a predisposition to suicide may be transmitted by heredity as cases of multiple suicides in the same family were observed. However, Durkheim dismisses both the hypotheses and the interpretation of suicide as deriving from the phenomenon of imitation. The keystone of the social order was considered to be an imitation as viewed by Gabriel Tarde. The term imitation consists of three confusing phenomena. Firstly, the mutual sentiments experienced by a large number of people would be called the fusion of consciousness. Revolutionary mob can be cited as the typical example of this. The identities of the consciousness of individuals tend to lose in the revolutionary mob: the emotions felt are same for each one as the next; mutual sentiments are stirred into the individuals. Passion, acts and beliefs belong to each because they belong to all. Collectivity itself is the basis of the phenomenon and not one or more individuals.

However, there isn't the true fusion of consciousness, as the individual often adapts himself to the collectivity, and he behaves like others. The individual wishes simply not to be conspicuous, and he yields to social imperatives which are more or less diffused, watered-down form of social imperative that can be taken as fashion. If a person wore a different dress other than what fashion required for that particular season, then he would feel devaluated and humiliated. So, in this case we found that there was submission of the individual to the collective rule instead of imitation. So, finally we can say that the designation imitation is the only strict value in the sense 'and act which has for its immediate antecedent the representation of a similar act, previously performed by another, without the intervention, between representation and execution, of any explicit or implicit intellectual operation relating to the intrinsic character of the act performed'.

Material

NOTES

Contagion and epidemic are taken by Durkheim as two phenomena. This distinction is quite useful. Firstly contagion should be called an inter-individual one, or even an individual phenomenon. This type of phenomenon proceeds from one individual to another. However, as in the case of an epidemic, there is something else besides the process of contagion that comes into play. The epidemic is a collective phenomenon whose basis is the whole of the society but it may be transmitted by contagion.

The phenomenon of imitation is the determining factor in the conception of the suicide rates, as statically analysed by Durkheim. The process of refutation is as follows. According to the process, if we consider suicide to be contagion, then we would be able to see the geographical distribution of suicide as shown by areas that showed particularly high cases and where the suicide rate is higher and was spreading to other regions. But nothing of this sort is shown in the analyses on the geographical maps of suicide. The region where the suicide rate is particularly low appears next to the region where the suicide rate is particularly high. So, the hypothesis of contagion is thereby incompatible with the irregular distribution of suicide rates. But in certain cases, contagion may come

According to Durkheim, incomplete and partial statistics dealing with only a small number are taken by him as the suicide statistics. Every year the suicide rate varies from one hundred to three hands and partial statistics. Every year the suicide rate varies from one hundred to three hundred. It is important to have an idea of the magnitude of these figures. For skentical reasons the suicide statistics. these figures. For skeptical reasons, the doctors have maintained that the study of variations in the suicide rate is almost of the suicide rate is almost o in the suicide rate is almost of no consequence in view of the small numbers considered as well as the possible inaccuration. as well as the possible inaccuracies in the statistics. With a certain number of circumstances, the suicide rate variances. circumstances, the suicide rate varies as observed by Durkheim, which he then takes into consideration. The statistical consideration of the statistical consideration of the statistical consideration. into consideration. The statistical correlations can determine the social types of suicides, as believed by him. There are three transfer and determine the social types of suicides, as believed by him. There are three types of suicides that Durkheim has defined:

- Altruist suicide
- Anomic suicide

The correlation between the suicide rate and integrating social context like family eligion, is the double form of marriage and integrating social context like family and religion, is the double form of marriage and children and results in the first type of suicide, i.e., egoist suicide. Generally specific suicide, i.e., egoist suicide. Generally speaking, the suicide rates vary with age. It is found to be higher in men than in women and its suicide rates vary with age. found to be higher in men than in women, and it also increases with age. According to Durkheim's German statistics, he analysed that Durkheim's German statistics, he analysed that the suicide rates also vary with religion.

He established that the frequency of suicides in the suicide rates also vary with religion. He established that the frequency of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion is less than the number of suicides in the number of suici than that the number of suicides in the population of Catholic religion to compares the situation between the single and that of and that of compares the situation between the single or widowed men and women, and that of married men and women. Simple statistical married men and women. Simple statistical methods are used to establish these comparisons. The frequency of suicides in methods are used to establish these same age is comparisons. The frequency of suicides in married and single men of the same age is compared in order to establish the coefficient of compared in order to establish the coefficient of preservation, as called by Durkheim Similarly for single there is reduction in the As a result of marriage, there is reduction in the frequency of suicide at a given age. Similarly, for single or married women, for widows and widowers, he establishes the married women or coefficient of a statistics, coefficient of preservation or coefficient of aggravation. According to certain statistics, not enjoy the coefficient of aggravation. According to certain statistics, they will married women suffer with a coefficient of aggravation. According to certain statismon or enjoy the coefficient of aggravation. According to certain statismon psychologists have been also preservation. And not enjoy the coefficient of aggravation. According to certain psychologists have been able to label this type of six an exact name, today's not having a child. In such psychologists have been able to label this type of situation in women as frustration about is too great. not having a child. In such cases, the disproportion between expectation and fulfillment

Egoist men and women are those who think primarily of themselves, especially when they are not integrated into a social group, and when the desires that motivate them are not limited to the measure compatible with human destiny by the social authority of the group. Such persons commit suicide more often than others when they come across these situations. The second type of suicide is the 'altruist suicide'. There are two principle examples given in Durkheim's book. The first example is required by the collectivity, which is observed in ancient societies; that is, after the death of her husband the widow who agrees takes her place on the pyre to be burned alive with her dead husband. In this example, the suicide that is attempted is through the complete disappearance of the individual into group, and the suicide does not take place because of an excess of individualism. The individual does not even think of asserting his right to live, but instead chooses death in conformity with social imperatives.

Similarity, altruist suicide can be said to be committed by the captain of the ship who chooses not to survive its loss. The individual suppresses his own instinct of selfpreservation. He obeys the orders of the group to sacrifice himself to the internalized social imperatives. Taking an example of modern times, we can look at the increase in the number of suicide rates in the professional body, the army. Suicide is committed a little more often by the soldiers than the civilians of the same age and class. Soldiers especially who are non-commissioned officers, or who belong to a strongly integrated group who commit suicide do not come into the category of the egoist suicide. Here, commissioned officers are listed because enlisted men may regard their military status as temporary, and they may combine obedience with a very great liberty in their evaluation of the system. The final major form of suicide discussed by Durkheim is anomic suicide which interests him the most because of its characteristics of the modern day society. The statistical correlation between the frequency of suicide and economic crisis can be indicated by this type of anomic suicide. A tendency in periods of economic crisis is indicated by the statistics. According to the statistical numbers, one can find a reduction in the frequency of suicides in the times of great political events. For example, the number of suicides during war time is smaller.

During the economic crisis, the frequency of anomic suicide increases; and also with the rise in divorce rates the frequency of suicides goes up. The influence of divorce on both men and women with regard to the frequency of suicide is studied extensively by Durkheim. The divorced woman is less likely to be threatened by suicide as compared to divorced man who is more likely to be threatened by suicide. Because of the tolerance of custom, man retains a certain freedom and finds equilibrium and discipline in marriage. Women, on the other hand, were more apt to find discipline than freedom in marriage as it was written by Durkheim in a previous article. After divorce the man returns to indiscipline, to the disparity between desires and satisfaction. On the other hand, woman after divorce feels more free and independent, and this partly compensates for the loss of familial protection. There is endless competition among individuals as the social existence is not ruled by customs anymore. The expectations in life are high, and also there is a great deal of demand from it. The disproportion between the desires and satisfaction is found to be in a continual rising mode leading to more sufferings at the mental and physical levels. Therefore, the suicidogenic impulse is on the rise. It is the result of restlessness and dissatisfaction prevailing in the atmosphere.

There is also the fourth type of suicide which is mentioned briefly as a footnote in Durkheim's work. This type of suicide is fatalistic suicide. Anomic suicide is more likely to occur in situations in which regulations are too weak, whereas fatalistic suicide is

more likely to occur in situations in which there is excessive regulation. According to Durkheim, the persons who are more likely to commit fatalistic suicide are the 'persons with futures pitilessly blocked and passions violently chocked by oppressive discipline' (1897/1951:276). The perfect example for this type of suicide will be of a slave who takes his own life because of the hopelessness related to the oppressive regulations of his actions.

The causes of suicide are essentially social even if it is an individual phenomenon. There are social forces, 'suicidogenic impulses', occurring through society whose beginning is not from the individual but the collectivity. These forces are real and the determining cause of suicide. Of course, says Durkheim, these 'suicidogenic impulses' are not present in any human being taken at random. If a human being commits suicide, it is in all probability because he was likely to behave in a particular way by his psychological make-up, nervous weakness or neurotic imbalance. The psychological predispositions are created by the 'suicidogenic impulses' which are the creation of social circumstances, because human beings living in the modern society have a great

The true causes are the social forces. These social forces differ from one another; from one religion to another; and from one group to another. This gets us back to the main concept of Durkheim society, according to which the societies are by nature heterogeneous in relation to individuals; that there are phenomena forces, whose foundation is the collectivity and not the total in the collectivity and not the collectivity is the collectivity and not the totality of the individuals. Phenomena or forces which can be explained only when taken as a second or the individuals. be explained only when taken as a whole were generated by the individuals together.

Therefore, we can say that individuals together. Therefore, we can say that individual phenomena are governed specially by social phenomena: each person believing that phenomena; each person believing that he is obeying himself to end his life is the most impressive example of the social forces which motivate individuals to their deaths.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- i. State the two principles of Durkheim's sociology.
- 2. How is Durkheim's division of labour different from the concept defined by economists?
- 3. State the process of refutation.

SOCIOLOGY OF RELIGION

Let us analyse Durkheim's sociology of religion.

The following are the characteristics of the modern society:

- Social differentiation
- Density of population
- Intensity of communication
- Struggle for survival

These are not to be regarded as abnormal because they are all related to the essence of modern society.

Modern societies at times show pathological symptoms and insufficient integration of the individual into the collective. This type of anomic suicide, according to Durkheim. corresponds to a rise in the suicide rate during times of economic crisis as well as in times of prosperity, i.e., when activity is exaggerated, intercourse and competition are amplified. These are inseparable from the society we belong to or live in, but which become pathological after certain limits.

Durkheim believes that religion does not help to solve the issue of anomic suicides. Religion is incapable of providing remedies for curing the pathological type of suicide. What Durkheim thought was the basic demand for the group for reintegration was discipline. Individuals are required to control their desires, obey rules and imperatives that not only fix the objectives they set for themselves but also indicate the means to be used rightly. In modern societies, not only are religions becoming more abstract but also possess a level of intellectual ity. Even though they have lost their function of social constraint to some extent, they encourage individuals to overcome their passions, to follow spiritual law, but they are incapable of pointing out the rules to be obeyed in secular life.

According to Durkheim, modern religions are now incapable of ensuring discipline to the same degree as in the past. They hardly possess any authority over morals. It is Durkheim's belief that, if left to himself, man has unlimited desires to motivate him. Usually, an individual has infinite desires, but the first necessity of morality and of society is discipline. Man requires to be disciplined by a superior force possessing the following features:

- It has to be commanding
- It has to be lovable

According to Durkheim, this force, which not only compels but also attracts can come only from the society. A general theory of religion can be derived by analysing the simplest and most primitive religious institutions. This statement provides Durkheim's leading idea, that is, it is possible to legitimately base the valid theory of higher religious values on a study of the primitive forms of religion.

Durkheim felt that science is the supreme intellectual and moral authority in modern day societies, and that societies are not only individualist but also rationalist. Though it is possible to transcend science, it is impossible to ignore its teaching or challenges. Society itself determines and supports the growth of individualism and nationalism. All societies need common beliefs, which can no longer be provided by traditional religion because religion does not fulfil the needs of the scientific spirit. The simple solution given by Durkheim is that science itself is capable of disclosing that all said and done, deep down, religion is not in contradiction to science. His suggestion is to discover reality that lies beneath all religions. Though religion is not a recreation of science, it is capable of providing us the confidence in the ability of the society to offer itself in every age with the goods it requires. Durkheim expresses this as follows - Religious interests are merely the symbolic form of social and moral interests.' Religion essentially divides the world into two kinds of phenomena:

- Sacred
- Profane

Religion, therefore, is not limited to the belief in a transcendent god. Religions exist without god, for example, the Buddhists believe that the idea of the supernatural cannot precede the idea of a natural order. The sacred comprises a body of rituals,

52

NOTES

Durkheim defines religion as follows - 'A religion is an interdependent system of beliefs and practices regarding things which are sacred, that is to say, apart, forbidden, beliefs and practices which unite all those who follow them in a single moral community

The next step of the study does away with interpretations that contradict Durkheim's. Interpretations stated in his book are animism and naturism. As per animism, religious beliefs are considered to be held wihtin spirits. These spirits are the transfiguration of the experience men have about their two-fold nature of body and soul. Naturism implies human beings worshipping transfigured natural forces. Durkheim says that religion would indicate a kind of collective hallucination either to love spirits whose unreality he/ she affirms, or to love natural forces transfigured merely by the means of fear.

Durkheim aims to establish the reality of the object of faith without accepting the intellectual object of faith and the intellectual content of traditional religions. In his eyes, the development of scientific nationalism has doomed traditional religions. However, he feels it will protect whatever it seems to be destroying by showing that in the last analysis, men worshipped only their society, nothing beyond or other than that.

Durkheim refers to Tylor's theory, which began with the phenomena of the dream. Dreams make people see themselves in places where they are actually not. They kind of see their own doubles. It is rather convenient for people to imagine this. Following death, this double also gets detached to become a floating spirit, either a good one or a bad genus. As per this interpretation, apply the spirit, either a good one or a contiate bad genus. As per this interpretation, early humas beings found it difficult to differentiate between the animate and the inanimate. between the animate and the inanimate. Durkheim refuted by taking up the elements of this interpretation one at a time. Why should are this interpretation one at a time. Why should one consider the dream so important? If we assume that not everyone conceives a doubt assume that not everyone conceives a double, why is this double considered sacred?

Why is it considered to be an extraordinary in the considered sacred? Why is it considered to be an extraordinary import? According to Durkheim, ancestor worship is not a primitive cult. Also it is not according to Durkheim, ancestor worship is not a primitive cult. Also, it is not correct that primitive cults were particularly addressed to the dead — the cult of the dead

Having declared the fundamental nature of religion as sacred, Durkheim has no culty in expressing the weaknesses of the arrival religion as sacred, Durkheim has no difficulty in expressing the weaknesses of the animist explanation. This explanation may throw light on the world of spirits. However, in D. separation of spirits is throw light on the world of spirits. However, in Durkheim's eyes the world of spirits is

Durkheim regards that the science of religions presupposes the unreality of the cendent as a subject of principle. The transcendary presupposes the unreality of the transcendary presupposes the unreality of the transcendary presupposes. transcendent as a subject of principle. The transcendent, being mystical, is automatically done away with by the scientific method. Therefore the discover the done away with by the scientific method. Therefore, the challenge is to rediscover the reality of a religion after abolishing the supernatural from it.

A significant idea in Durkheim's thought is that of totemism being the simplest ions. This implies an evolutionist origin of religions of the simplest and the simplest of a sective of a section of a s religions. This implies an evolutionist origin of religious history. In the perspective of a non-evolutionist viewpoint, totemism would be one sale. non-evolutionist viewpoint, totemism would be one religion among others. If Durkheim asserts that it is the control of the perspective of the control of the religion among others. If Durkheim asserts that it is the simplest, most elementary religion, he is implicitly acknowledging that religion has a simplest, most elementary religion.

he is implicitly acknowledging that religion has a progression from a single origin. This simple religion comprised 'clan and totem'. The clan refers to a kindred p not based on the ties of consanguinity. It is a kindred comprised to the clan refers to a kindred comprised to the clan refers to a kindred comprise to the clan refers to the comprise to the comprise to the clan refers to the comprise to the comprise to the comprise to the clan refers to the clan refe group not based on the ties of consanguinity. It is a human group with its identity coming af plant of from the connection established with a plant or animal, with a genus or type of plant of an animal. The transmission of the totem recognized with a genus or type of plant of the animal state of the animal s animal. The transmission of the totem recognized with the clan is effectuated in a variety

of ways. The most common way of transmission is through the mother, but it is not a case of absolute regularity or of law. There are clan totems, but there are also individual totems and totems of more widespread groups like matrimonial classes.

Every totem posses its emblem, also called blazon. Each clan has an object, such as a piece of wood or even polished stones, on which the totem is symbolically represented. Ordinary objects, called churinga, are transfigured the moment they carry the emblem of the totem. They also get infused by the holy quality associated with the totem. In modern societies, the flag is the equivalent of the churinga of the Australians. The flag of a collectivity is considered sacred as far as the native land is concerned. It is the equivalent of certain phenomena studied by Durkheim. Totemic things, or objects carrying the symbol or emblem of the totem, result in behaviour distinctive of the religious order. i.e., either the practice of non-participation or positive practices. The clan members should avoid eating or touching the totem or the objects possessing similar holy quality of the totem. They must exhibit several ways of respect with regard to the totem.

A sphere of holy comprises:

- (i) The very plants or animals which are totem
- (ii) The items bearing the representation of the totem

Eventually, the revered quality is conveyed to individuals. Holy things include plants, animals, their representations, individuals connected to these sacred objects through clan involvement. This realm of sacred things is prepared in a methodical manner. There are profane things towards which people behave in an economic manner as economic activities are considered the model of profane action itself.

Durkheim does not believe that totemism descends from ancestor worship. According to him, primitive phenomenon manifests itself in animal worship, placing individual totemism as anterior to clan totemism. He does not accept interpretations according to which local totemism, i.e., the attribution of a totem to a fixed locality, is the basic phenomenon. That is, for him, historically and logically, the totemism of the clan.

According to him, what the Australians refer to as external to profane things is primarily an anonymous, impersonal force which is personified randomly in a plant, an animal or the representation of any of those. All worship and belief is directed towards this impersonal and anonymous force.

Durkheim feels that society supports the rise of values because persons, brought together and living in communication with one another, are capable of making the divine create a religion through the exaltation of festivals.

Durkheim alludes to the revolutionary cult. On the occasion of the French Revolution, individuals were also seized with a kind of sacred eagerness. The terms 'nation', 'liberty' and 'revolution' were charged with a blessed value. Such periods of turmoil are favourable to the collective exaltations which produce the sacred. Durkheim admits that the exaltation during the French Revolution was insufficient to give rise to a new religion. But, he believed that other turmoil will arise and there will be a moment when modern societies will again be gripped by the sacred passion, from which new religions will originate.

Thus, the sociological understanding of religion takes two forms. One of these is expressed by the following plan:

In totemism, human beings worship their own society even without understanding it. Holiness is first connected to the collective and impersonal force which symbolizes

Material

NOTES

the society. The second version of the theory believes that societies are discarded to give rise to gods or religions when they are in an exalted state. This takes place when society progresses in direction to strengthen itself. In Australian tribes, this exaltation takes place in the form of rituals, that exist even today.

Religion comprises a collection of beliefs, expressed orally and taking on the form of a system of thought.

 $\label{lem:continuous} \textbf{Durkheim emphasized the importance of two kinds of social phenomena:}$

- Symbols
- Rites

A lot of social behaviour is addressed not merely to objects but also to their symbols. Human beings address their social behaviour to these objects/things themselves,

Durkheim proposes a detailed theory of rites where he differentiates between the types of rites and their functions. He states three kinds of rites:

- Negative rites
- Positive rites
- Odd rites or rites of compensation

Negative rites are interdicts such as prohibition of eating or touching. They develop in the direction of all religious practices of asceticism. Positive rites, on the other hand, are rites of communion aimed at promoting procreation or reproduction. Durkheim examines the mimetic or representative rites, which attempt to emulate the things one

These negative, positive or peculiar rites all have the primary purpose of establishing rial order. They are aimed at assess of a social order. They are aimed at supporting the community, renewing the sense of belonging to the group, sustaining balling that is only belonging to the group, sustaining belief and faith, etc. A religion continues to exist only by practices which are both symbols and faith, etc. A religion continues to exist only

by practices which are both symbols of the belief and the traditions of renewing them. Durkheim tries to understand the religious attitude and practices of the Australian as well as the habits of thinking related to a still de and practices of the Australian colological tribes as well as the habits of thinking related to these beliefs. He develops a sociological theory of knowledge by examining Australia theory of knowledge by examining Australian totemism. For him, religion is the centre from which not ethical and religious pulses and totemism. For him, religion is the centre from which not ethical and religious rules originate through differentiation. It is also the

Therefore, it can be concluded that Durkheim considered religion to be the most account institution of society, which format a considered religion to be the most country. This significant institution of society, which formed the foundation for other social forms. This is so because religion knits humanity through the foundation for other social forms. is so because religion knits humanity through collective consciousness. He believed that religion was born in the early human social: religion was born in the early human societies due to an inclination to relate collective emotions with an intangible force. With time emotions with an intangible force. With time, emotions came to symbolize something and interactions were transformed into rituals civiliance to symbolize something and the symbolize something and th interactions were transformed into rituals giving way to organized religion. As a result, there was a distinction the sacred and the sacred a there was a distinction the sacred and the profane. However, religion was eventually eclipsed by other social facts, and science and indicate the profane. eclipsed by other social facts, and science and individualism began to have more relevance than religion. So, even when we see that religion than religion. So, even when we see that religion no longer has the same hold over people's lives, it must be noted that it is religion to longer has the same hold over the society's people's lives, it must be noted that it is religion no longer has the same hold or existence, and that has made social interaction that is fundamental to the society's existence, and that has made social interactions possible. Though other forces have come into existence, still religion cannot be replaced with any of these forces. Durkheim is skeptical about the advent of modernity and considers it as 'a period of transition and

Durkheim claimed that if we wish to understand the society, we must first try to understand how their origin is related to religion. For him, religion begot other social forms. Durkheim opined that it is the society that creates categories, and he refers to these categories as collective creations. So, as societies form, categories are formed too; but it is not done consciously. These categories precede individual experiences. It was along these lines that Durkheim tried to bridge the gap between seeing categories as constructed out of human experience and as logically prior to that experience. We understand the world by understanding social facts; for instance, we chiefly use calendar to measure time, but calendar was invented to keep track of our social gatherings and rituals; and these rituals have their origin in religion itself. Durkheim suggested that even science has its roots in religion. Durkheim remarks that 'religion gave birth to all that is essential in the society'.

System of Classification

It is probable that man has always classified, more or less clearly, the things on which he lived, according to the means he used to get them; for example, animals living in the water, or in the air or on the ground. But at first, such groups were not connected with each other or systematized. They were divisions, and distinctions of ideas, not schemes of classification. Moreover, it is evident that these distinctions are closely linked to practical concerns, of which they merely express certain aspects. The Australians do not classify the universe between the totems of his tribe with a view to regulate his conduct or even to justify his practice. It is because of the idea of the totem being fundamental for him that he is under an obligation to place everything else that he knows in relation to it. Therefore, we may think that the conditions on which these very ancient classifications are based may have played a key role in the origin of the classificatory function in general.

It is very simple to analyse how these classifications were modelled on the closest and the most basic form of social organization. However, it is not going far enough. Society was not just a model followed by the classificatory thought. It comprised its own divisions that served as divisions for the classification system. Social categories were the first logical categories; classes of men were the first classes of things into which these things were brought into integration. It happened because men grouped and identified themselves in the form of groups. Further, in their ideas they grouped other things, and in the beginning, the two means of grouping were merged to the point of becoming indistinguishable. Moieties were the first genera — clans, the first species. Things were supposed to be essential parts of society, and their place in society determined their place in nature. One may even wonder whether the schematic manner in which genera are usually conceived may not have depended in part on the same influences. It is a fact of current observation that the things that they comprise are commonly imagined as placed in a kind of ideational milieu, with a more or less plainly delimited spatial circumscription. It is definitely not without cause that concepts and their interrelations have so usually been represented by concentric and eccentric circles, interior and exterior to each other, etc.

Not just the external forms of classes, but also the relations uniting them among themselves possess social origin. Since human groups fit one into another — the subclan into the moiety, the moiety into the tribe—hence, the groups of things are ordered in the similar manner. Their regular reduction in span, from genus to species, species to Variety, and so forth, stems from the equally diminishing extent presented by social groups as one leaves the largest and oldest, and reaches the more recent and the more

NOTES

derivative. If the totality of things is viewed as a single system, it is because the society itself is viewed in a similar manner. It is a whole; or rather it is the exclusive whole to which everything is related. Hence, logical hierarchy is just another aspect of social hierarchy, and the unity of knowledge is nothing more than the very unity of the collectivity, enlarged to the universe.

Additionally, the ties that unite the things within a group or different groups to each other are themselves viewed as social ties. The expressions by which we refer to these relations still possess a moral implication; but whereas for us they are barely more than metaphors, initially they meant what they stood for. Things belonging to the same class were actually taken as relatives of the individuals of the same social groups, and hence, as a result, of each other. They are of the same flesh and the same family. Thus, all points with the one existing between a master and an object possessed, and between a chief and his subjects. One may even wonder whether the idea of the pre-eminence of in its rudimentary form. Among the Zuni, the animals symbolizing the six main clans are that are grouped with them.

But if the foregoing has allowed us to understand how the notion of classes, linked to each other in a single system, could have been born; we still do not know what the forces were which induced men to divide things as they did between the classes, not necessarily follow that the external form of classification was furnished by society, it does not necessarily follow that the way in which the framework was used is due to reasons of the same origin. A priori, it is very possible that motives of a quite different order the contrary, in which things were connected and merged, or else, on All types of a great in the distinguished and opposed.

All types of affective elements unite in the representation made of it. Religious emotions, particularly, not just give it a unique trace, but provide it the most basic properties it is constituted of. Above all, things are sacred or profane, pure or impure, favourable of in which they influence the social sensibility. The differences are just expressions of the manner the fashion in which they are grouped are more affective than intellectual.

It has usually been stated that man began to consider things by relating them to better be termed as sociocentrism, consists of. The individual is not the centre of the first Nothing proves this more noticeably than the manner in which gets objectified, not man universe, in a way, within the limits of tribal space. Also, we have seen how universal beyond its real limits. By the virtue of the same mental disposition, so many people have capital, i.e., at the place which is the centre of the universe and everything in it was initially conceived. The classic

The classification of concepts is logical. Now a concept is the notion of a clearly is something essentially fluid and inconsistent. Its contagious influence spreads far beyond its point of origin, extending to everything about it, so that it is not possible to say where

its power of propagation ends. The states of an emotional nature necessarily possess the same characteristic. It is not possible to say where they begin or where they end. They lose themselves in each other, and mingle their properties in such a way that they cannot be rigorously categorized. The pressure put forward by the group on all its members does not allow the individuals to freely evaluate the notions which society itself has elaborated, and in which it has placed something of its personality. These constructs are sacred for the individuals. So, the history of scientific classification is, in the final analysis, the history of the stages by which this element of social affectivity has progressively weakened, giving more and more room to the individuals for reflective thought. However, it is not the case that these distant influences which we have just studied have ceased to be felt presently. They have left behind them an effect that is surviving; it is the very cadre of all classification. It is the assembly of mental habits by virtue of which we envisage things and facts in the form of coordinated or hierarchical groups.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 4. State the characteristics of modern society.
- 5. Differentiate between negative and positive rights.
- 6. Differentiate between concept and emotion.

4.4 SUMMARY

- The heart of Durkheim's theory lies in his concept of social fact. Durkheim differentiated between two basic types of social facts—material and non-material.
- Durkheim's study of suicide is a good illustration of the significance of non-material social facts in his work. In his basic causal model, changes in non-material social facts ultimately cause differences in suicide rates.
- Durkheim differentiated among four types of suicide—egoistic, altruistic, anomic and fatalistic—and showed how each is affected by different changes in social currents.
- Durkheim was deeply offended by the Dreyfus affair, particularly its anti-Semitism.
 However, Durkheim did not attribute this anti-Semitism to racism among the French people.
- The basic feature of Durkheim's sociology is its steady foundation in a very substantial and definite epistemology. Actually, the intellectual career of the French sociologist was highlighted by the incessant effort to build a sociological science with a solid epistemological foundation (in fact, the epistemological concerns form the core of his research interests).
- The first major book of Durkheim was De la division du travail social, which was his doctoral thesis also and was highly influenced by Auguste Comte. The relation between individuals and the collective is the theme of this book which seeks to know 'how can a multiplicity of individuals achieve what is the condition of social existence namely a consensus?'
- Durkheim's best known book is his study of suicide. His aim in this book was not only to provide an account of suicide but also to illustrate how his methodology

NOTES

- could be applied to even the most individual of acts. Durkheim in this book showed that to what extent the individuals are determined by the collective reality.
- The various characteristics of modern society are social differentiation, organic solidarity, density of population, intensity of communications and the struggle for survival. All these phenomena should not be regarded as abnormal as they are related to the essence of modern society.
- All sophisticated classifications are systems of hierarchized notions. Things are not simply arranged by themselves in the form of isolated groups, but these groups stand in fixed relationships to each other and together form a single whole. Moreover, these systems, like those of science, have a purely speculative purpose.

KEY TERMS

- Totemism: A belief in totems or in kinship through common affiliation to a totem
- Rabbi: A person trained in Jewish law, ritual, and tradition and ordained for leadership of a Jewish congregation, especially one serving as chief religious
- Proletariat: The class of industrial wage earners who, possessing neither capital nor production means, must earn their living by selling their labour
- Anthropology: The scientific study of the origin, the behaviour, and the physical, social, and cultural development of humans
- Moiety: Either of two kinship groups based on unilateral descent that together make up a tribe or society
- Sociocentrism: The tendency to believe that one's ethnic or cultural group is centrally important, and that all other are to one's centrally important, and that all other groups are measured in relation to one's

ANSWERS TO 'CHECK YOUR PROGRESS'

- The two principles that can be clearly seen in Durkheim's sociology are as follows:
 Sociology must be a science which has a physical- Sociology must be a science which has a methodology similar to the physical natural sciences, that is, based on position.
- The positivist science of society goes against philosophy and psychology.

 The positivist science of society goes against philosophy and psychology.

 The positivist science of society goes against philosophy and psychology.

 The positivist science of society goes against philosophy and psychology. 2. Durkheim's division of labour differs from the concept of division of labour as defined by economists. The demarcation of defined by economists. The demarcation of occupations and multiplication of industrial activities stand for the social disc industrial activities stand for the social differentiation which took precedence according to Durkheim. The beginning of social differentiation which took precedence according to Durkheim. The beginning of social differentiation which took preceded mechanical solidarity and segmental structure.
- 3. According to the process of refutation, if we consider suicide to be contagion, then we would be able to see the geographical to see the geographic then we would be able to see the geographical distribution of suicide as shown by areas that showed particularly high cases and areas that showed particularly high cases and where the suicide as shown was spreading to other regions. But nothing active the suicide rate is higher and was spreading to other regions. But nothing of this sort is shown in the analyses
- 4. The following are the characteristics of the modern society:

- Density of population
- Intensity of communication
- · Struggle for survival
- 5. Negative rites are interdicts such as prohibition of eating or touching. They develop in the direction of all religious practices of asceticism. Positive rites, on the other hand, are rites of communion aimed at promoting procreation or reproduction.
- 6. A concept is the notion of a clearly determined group of things; its limits may be marked precisely. Emotion, on the contrary, is something essentially fluid and inconsistent. Its contagious influence spreads far beyond its point of origin, extending to everything about it, so that it is not possible to say where its power of propagation ends.

OUESTIONS AND EXERCISES

Short-Answer Questions

- 1. Write a brief note on the early life of Durkheim.
- 2. What is the difference between repressive and restitutive law?
- 3. Write a short note on repressive law and collective consciousness.
- 4. State the concept of totemism in brief.

Long-Answer Questions

- 1. Name the sociologist by whom Durkheim was influenced. Discuss various elements of this influence.
- 2. Describe how Durkheim relates to sociology as a science.
- 3. What is collective consciousness? Discuss its effects on the law.
- 4. What is the difference between mechanical solidarity and organic solidarity? Describe with examples.
- 5. Explain the four types of suicides as described by Durkheim.
- 6. Describe the theoretical importance of religion in the elementary forms of religious life.

FURTHER READING

- Adams, Bert N., Rosalind Ann Sydie and R.A. Sydie. 2001. Sociological Theory. California: Pine Forge Press.
- Allan, Kenneth and Kenneth D. Allan. 2009. Explorations in Classical Sociological Theory: Seeing the Social World. California: Pine Forge Press.
- Calhoun, Craig J. 2002. Classical Sociological Theory. Hoboken, NJ: Wiley-Blackwell. Edles, Laura and Desfor Scott Appelrouth. 2010. Sociological Theory in the Classical
- Era: Text and Readings. California: Pine Forge Press. Jayapalan, J. 2001. Sociological Theory. New Delhi: Atlantic Publishers and Distributors.
- Ritzer, George. 2007. Sociological Theory. New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Turner, Jonathan H. 2007. Handbook of Sociological Theory. New York: Springer.

UNIT 5 MAX WEBER

Structure

- 5.0 Introduction
- 5.1 Unit Objectives
- 5.2 Max Weber's Contribution to Sociological Theories
 5.2.1 Types of Social Action
- 5.3 Power and Authority
- 5.4 The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism
 - 5.4.1 Religion and Social Change
 - 5.4.2 The Religion of China
 - 5.4.3 The Religion of India
- 5.5 Summary
- 5.6 Key Terms
- 5.7 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'
- 5.8 Questions and Exercises
- 5.9 Further Reading

5.0 INTRODUCTION

Max Weber, often referred to as the 'bourgeois Marx', became a sociologist 'in a long and intense debate with the ghost of Marx'. His work Wirtschaft und Gesellschaft (Economy and Society) and his concern with the Protestant ethic showed that throughout his life he was engaged in the problems and issues raised by Marx. Though Weber was his life he was engaged in the problems and issues raised by Marx. Though Weber was his life he was engaged in the problems and issues raised by Marx. Though Weber was harx's (and Hegel's) conceptions—the main feature of Weber's overall work was Marx's (and Hegel's) conceptions—the main feature of Weber's overall work was haped by his debate with Marx; and among those who took up the Marxian challenge, shaped by his debate with Marx; and among those who took up the Marxian challenge, weber was perhaps the most influential. His main interest, which became a lifelong Weber was perhaps the most influential. His main interest, which became a lifelong on only to a fastidious examination of the economic system of the West but all its major not only to a fastidious examination of the economic system of the West but all its major not only to a fastidious examination of the economic system of the West but all its major not only to a fastidious examination and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed him to contrast it with the civilizations of the nature of Western civilization and allowed

Weber's refutation of Marx was limited to him showing the supposed inadequacy of some of Marx's revolutionary conclusions and of challenging the alleged human and moral superiority of socialism as compared with capitalism. Thus the American sociologist moral superiority of socialism as compared with capitalism. Thus the American sociologist moral superiority of socialism as compared with capitalism. Thus the American sociologist moral superiority of socialism as compared with capitalism. Thus the American sociologist moral superiority of socialism as compared with capitalism. Thus the American sociologist moral superiority of socialism as compared with capitalism. Thus the American sociologist moral superiority of socialism as compared with capitalism. Thus the explanation of great historical the indispensability of an important role of 'ideas' in the explanation of rom capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition from capitalism to for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition of for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition of for whom class consciousness was fundamental in the transition of for whom class consciousness was fundamental in t

NOTES

Max Weber has had a more powerful positive impact on a wide range of sociological theories than any other sociological theorist. This influence is traceable to the sophistication, complexity and sometimes even confusion of Weberian theory. Despite its problems, Weber's work represents a remarkable fusion of historical research and sociological theorizing. We open this unit with a discussion of the theoretical roots and methodological orientation of Weberian theory. We see that Weber, over the course of his career, moved progressively towards a fusion of history and sociology, i.e., towards the development of historical sociology.

The heart of Weberian sociology lies in substantive sociology, not in methodological statements. Although Weber based his theories on his thoughts about social action and social relationships, his main interest was the large-scale structures and institutions of society. We deal especially with his analysis of the three structures of authority—legal, traditional and charismatic. In the context of legal authority, we deal with his famous ideal—typical bureaucratic—and show how he used that tool to analyse traditional and charismatic authority. Of particular interest is Weber's work on charisma. Not only did he have a clear sense of it as a structure of authority, but he was also interested in the processes by which such a structure is produced. Although his work on social structures such as authority—is important, it is at the cultural level, in his work on social satisfaction of the world, that Weber's most important insights lie.

Weber's thoughts on rationalization and various other issues are illustrated in his work on the relationship between religion and capitalism. At one level, this comprises a series of studies of the relationship between ideas (religious ideas) and the development of the spirit of capitalism and, ultimately, capitalism itself. At another level, it is a study of how the West developed a distinctive rational religious system (for example, Confucianism, Taoism, Hindrism) that inhibits the growth of a rational economic system.

It is this kind of majestic sweep over the life in the growth of a rational economic system. It is this kind of majestic sweep over the history of many sectors of the world that helps

5.1 UNIT OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able to:

- Discuss Weber's opinion about traditionalism and rationality • Explain Weber's theories of authority, power and religion
- Summarise the important parameters of the religious systems in India and China
 Evaluate the sociological Evaluate the sociological perspective of Weber's works
- Assess Weber's concept of social action

MAX WEBER'S CONTRIBUTION TO SOCIOLOGICAL THEORIES

Max Weber was born in Erfurt, Germany, on 21 April 1864, in a typical middle-class family. The differences between his parents left a dark left and a typical middle-class intellectual family. The differences between his parents left a deep impression on both his intellectual orientation and psychological development. His Cal orientation and psychological development. His father was a bureaucrat who acquired a comparatively significant political position. comparatively significant political position. His father was a bureaucrat who acquire political establishment and as a result escheured. Weber's father was clearly a part of the that would political establishment and as a result eschewed any activity or idealism that would require personal sacrifice or threaten his nosition. require personal sacrifice or threaten his position within the system. In addition, the

senior Weber was a man who enjoyed earthly pleasures and in this and many other ways he stood in sharp contrast to his wife. Max Weber's mother was a devout Calvinist. a woman who sought to lead an ascetic life largely devoid of the pleasure craved by her husband. Her concerns were more otherworldly; she was disturbed by the signs of imperfection which made her insecure that she was not destined for salvation. These deep differences between the parents led to marital tension, and left an immense impact on Weber.

Since it was impossible to emulate both parents, Weber was presented with a clear choice as a child (Marianne Weber 1975, 62). He first seemed to opt for his father's orientation to life, but later he drew close to his mother's approach. Whatever the choice, the tension produced by the need to choose between such polar opposites negatively affected Max Weber's psyche. At the age of eighteen, Max Weber left home for a short time to attend the University of Heidelberg. He had already demonstrated intellectual precocity, but on a social level he entered Heidelberg as a shy and underdeveloped boy. However, it quickly changed after he gravitated towards his father's way of life and joined his father's old dueling fraternity. There he developed socially, at least in part because of the huge quantities of beer he consumed with his peers. In addition, he proudly displayed the dueling scars that were the trademarks of such fraternities.

After three terms, Weber left Heidelberg for military service, and in 1884 he returned to Berlin to his parent's home to take courses at the University of Berlin. He remained there for most of the next eight years as he completed his studies, earned his Ph. D., became a lawyer and started teaching at the University of Berlin. In the process, his interests shifted more towards his lifelong concerns—economics, history and sociology. During his eight years in Berlin, Weber was financially dependent on his father, the circumstances he progressively grew to dislike. At the same time, he moved closer to his mother's values. For example, during one semester as a student, his work habits were described as follows: 'He continues the rigid work discipline, regulates his life by the clock, divides the daily routine into exact section for the various subjects, saves in his way, by feeding himself evenings in his room with a pound of raw chopped beef and four fried eggs' (Mizman 1970, 48; Marianne Weber 1975, 105). Thus Weber, following his mother, had become ascetic and diligent, a compulsive worker—in contemporary terms a 'workaholic'.

This compulsion for work led in 1896 to a position as professor of economics at Heidelberg. But in 1897, with Weber's academic career blossoming, his father died following a violent argument between them. Shortly thereafter Weber began to manifest symptoms that were to culminate in a nervous breakdown. Often unable to sleep or to work, Weber spent the next six or seven years in near total collapse. After a long hiatus, some of his powers began to return in 1903, but it was not until 1904, when he delivered (in the United States) his first lecture in six and half years, that Weber was able to begin to return to active academic life. In 1904 and 1905, he published one of his best known works, The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism.

After 1904, although he continued to be plagued by psychological problems, Weber was able to function, indeed to produce some of his most important works. During these years, Weber published his studies of the world's religions in a historical perspective (for example China, India and ancient Judaism). At the time of his demise (14 June 1920), he Was working on his most significant work, Economy and Society. Economy and Society Was published by his wife after Weber's death and was translated in numerous languages.

NOTES

Apart from producing voluminous writings during this period, Weber was engaged in various other activities as well. He helped in founding the German Sociological Society in 1910. In addition, Weber was politically very active and wrote essays on the important contemporary issues. We have to accept that there was a strife in Weber's life and, more significantly, in his work. He was perpetually torn between the bureaucratic mind, as represented by his father, and his mother's religiosity. This unresolved tension pervades through Weber's work as it permeated his personal life.

5.2.1 Types of Social Action

Weber's entire sociology, if we accept his words at face value, was based on his conception of social action (Turner, 1983). He differentiated between action and purely reactive behaviour. The concept of behaviour is reserved, then as now (Ritzer, 1975a), to automatic was not of interest in Weber's sociology. He was bothered about action which clearly between the happening of a stimulus and the consequent meaningful action) action was said to occur when individuals attached subjective meanings to their action. of its subjective meaning' (1921/1968:8). A good, and more specific example of Weber's conscious, primary orientation to economic provision, but the belief that it is necessary' (1921/1968:64).

In embedding his analysis in mental processes and the resulting meaningful action, the foundation of the interpretation of action in sociology. Weber seemed to be making essentially the same point made by Durkheim in discussing at least some nonmaterial same as psychologists are interested in mental processes, but this is not the implied that he had a great concern with mental processes, he actually spent little time on them. The sociologists Hans Gerth and C. Wright Mills have called attention to Weber's much abused notion referring to a profoundly irrational center of creativity, a center correct when he pointed out that although Weber's work on mental processes is suggestive, it is hardly the basis for a systematic micro-sociology. However, it was the of individuals and their behaviour—symbolic internationalism, phenomenology and so

In this action theory, Weber's clear intent was to focus on individuals and patterns and regularities of action and not on the collectivity. According to Weber, 'Action in the of one or more individual human beings'. Weber was prepared to admit that for some interpretation of action in sociological work these collectivities as individuals 'but for the subjective since, these alone can be treated as agents in a course of subjectively understandable is ultimately concerned with individuals, not collectivities

All kinds of action, even the ones that are explicit, are not 'social' in nature. Overt action that is geared just towards the behavior of inert action is non-social. The subjective attitudes of individuals comprise social action only when it is oriented to others' behaviour. For example, religious behaviour is not social if it is just a matter of meditation or private prayer. The economic activity of an individual becomes social only when it takes into account the behavior of others. Thus, it can be stated that an action becomes social only when the actor's real control over economic goods is respected by others.

It is accepted that the individual's actions are strongly influenced just by the fact that he is a part of a crowd confined in a limited space. Further, it is also possible for huge numbers, though scattered, to be influenced simultaneously or successively by a source of influence operating likewise on all the individuals, e.g., by means of press. Here also the behaviour of an individual is affected by his membership of the crowd and by the fact that he is by the mere fact that the individual acts as the part of a gathering.

For Weber, there are four ideal types of action which he considered the basic building blocks for sociology. These four ideal actions are as follows:

- Traditional action
- Value-rational action
- Affectional action
- Instrumentally rational action

It is only when people accept completely technical means for realising their goals that action becomes instrumentally rational. Here, the means to achieve the most efficient way of reaching a goal or objective is chosen. For example, a businessman looks towards the most efficient way of maximizing profit, a politician tries to find the most feasible way to maximize his party's vote, etc. According to Weber, those economic, political and scientific actions that involve cautious choices and decision-making can be said to be instrumentally rational action. On the other hand, value-rational action can be described as that action which is based on reason in relation to some illogical or arbitrarily chosen value. A religious person who prays and gives alms to poor people can be said to be behaving in a value-rational manner. The religious person is acts in this manner for his own sake and because he considers it an absolute duty. Here instrumental considerations are not taken into account at all. In value-rational action usually there is no objective that that can be discerned easily, even though a religious person in the example may think that his or her action may lead to salvation. Moreover, in such actions, there is no suggestion that actions are technically suitable in cause-effect terms. However, they are rational in the means that they take up for expressing specific values. According to Weber, traditional action is that type of action which is a result of habit and thus is an unthinking action. Such action involves only some degree of logic and is routine in nature. As the name suggests in traditional action people act in the way like they have usually done in similar situations in the past. Affectional action is that action which is a result of a direct expression of emotion that does not take into account goals or objectives. An example of an Affectional action is a violent angry outburst.

Since the four types of action are idea; in nature, such actions do not distinctly appear in reality. Rather, all the substantial patterns of action are expected to be interpretable in terms of more than one type of action. To take an example, the actions interpretable in terms of more than one type of action. To take an example, the actions of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a company who needs to set the wage level for his employees may of a manager of a comp

NOTES

a certain rate of pay. The manager may also without thinking respond to the proposals of the employee union during the wage negotiations taking a reactive stance against them. Finally, a breakdown in the wage negotiation process might result in angry outbursts as one side or the other walks away from negotiations.

To figure out how an action corresponds to the four ideal actions Weber suggested a technique which he considered was central to sociology — the technique of understanding (Verstehen in German). According to Webber, the goal of a social science is to use ideal types as the means of comprehending the meanings which people give to their actions. These meanings encompass their intentions and motives, their expectations about the behaviour of others, and their insights of the situation in which they find themselves. Weber believes that sociologists should infer these meanings by scrutinizing people's actions, and then endeavor for an interpretative comprehension of the same. This for Weber would involve emphasising with those that are being studied, although it does not mean sympathising with them. To take an example, any sane person will not approve of a serial killer but the only way one can hope to explain his or her actions is if one starts looking at the world the way a serial killer sees it. A sociologist may employ empathy by trying to identify with the serial killer up to the point so that the sociologist may comprehend the reasons for the serial killer's actions. However, we do not sympathize with them or condone their actions. To go beyond empathy to sympathy is to make the same mistake as those who go beyond factual judgements to value judgements.

Traditionalism and Rationality

Weber rejected the deterministic system of explanation as a result of his philosophy of science. The fundamental explanations formally have deterministic system of explanation as a result of his philosophy of science. The fundamental explanations formed by sociologists should always be based on an interpretative comprehension of the making the model. on an interpretative comprehension of the subjective meanings which individuals provide to their actions. In his theories Wahar and thus to their actions. In his theories Weber emphasized the free will of individuals and thus believed that any study of social development. believed that any study of social development has to acknowledge the part played by individual action. Unlike Marx Weber haliant did acknowledge the part played by individual action. Unlike Marx, Weber believed that individuals have the power to act independently and are not just as the occurrent. independently and are not just as the occupants of a social role or a class position. For Weber then the future is open and undecided. Weber then the future is open and undecided and cannot be predicted through analysis.

Thus, Weber considers the critique of canitalisms. Thus, Weber considers the critique of capitalism by Marx to be incorrect.

Weber assessed the change from feudalism to capitalism in terms of a change in haracteristic meanings which individuals. the characteristic meanings which individuals provided to their actions. For Weber, this transition in Europe was a result of a process of a characteristic meanings which individuals provided to their actions. For Weber, this transition in Europe was a result of a process of rationalization. This process involved a transition from value-rational actions to instrumentalization. This process involved a result of a process of rationalization. transition from value-rational actions to instrumentally rational actions. In Weber's view, people's actions were shaped by absolute religional actions. In Weber's view, people's actions were shaped by absolute religious and political values in the feudal era.

However, in modern societies, people employ leads and political values in the feudal era. However, in modern societies, people employ logical calculations of the probable effects of various courses of action that they may take Tourish and political values in the feudar of various courses of action that they may take Tourish and the probable effects of various courses of action that they may take. To take an example, in the modern era political authority is based on legal procedures while in the feudal era it was based on religious values like the concept of the divine sixty. religious values like the concept of the divine right of a king. Moreover, in the feudal era it was based actions that took place every day were hased on the line. Moreover, in the feudal era in modern actions that took place every day were based on traditions. On the other hand, in modern societies most of the areas of social life. societies most of the areas of social life are open up to rational and reflective considerations. For example, decisions relating to the economic action are based on market calculations in capitalist societies rathered. market calculations in capitalist societies rather than the fixed ways of staying rooted in

Weber does not mean to suggest that modern societies have completely rejected tional actions, on the contrary, we still can acctions to an extent remains traditional. In modern societies have completely rejection to the contrary, we still can see that in character everyday actions to section may an extent remains traditional. In modern society, the traditional forms of action may attain a new significance. This can be ascertained from Weber's considerations of modern day economic actions. Weber states that religious values motivated the actions of those who became the first generations of calculating capitalists. The later generations of individuals who became capitalist carried on with their business activities like it had become a routine matter. For Weber, as such capitalist entrepreneurs become mere cogs in the massive bureaucratic machine, their work becomes a 'dull compulsion' about which they possess no real choice. Finally they might remain free, but in practice they are constrained.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 1. State the four types of ideal actions stated by Weber.
- 2. What is traditional action?
- 3. When was The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism published?

POWER AND AUTHORITY

It was Weber's interest in politics that motivated his sociological interest in the structures of authority. Weber was no political radical; he was almost as critical of modern capitalism as Marx but he was not an advocate for revolution. He wanted to change society gradually, not overthrow it. He had little faith in the ability of the masses to accrete 'better' society. Moreover, Weber also saw little hope in the middle classes, who he felt were dominated by shortsighted, petty bureaucrats. For Weber the hope—if indeed he had any hope lay with the great political leaders rather than with the masses or the bureaucrats. Along with his faith in political leaders went his unswerving nationalism. He placed the nation above all else: 'The vital interests of the nation stand, of course, above democracy and parliamentarianism' (Weber, 1921/1968:1383). Weber preferred democracy as a political form not because he believed in the masses but because it offered maximum dynamism and the best milieu to generate political leaders (Mommsen, 1974). Weber noted that authority structures exist in every social institution, and his political views were related to his analysis of these structures in all settings. Of course, they were most relevant to his views on the polity.

Weber began his analysis of authority structures in a way that was consistent with his assumptions about the nature of action. He defined domination as the 'probability that certain specific commands (or all commands) will be obeyed by a given group of persons' (Weber, 1921/1968:212). Domination interested Weber and these were the legitimate forms of domination, or what he called authority. What concerned Weber, and what played a central role in much of his theories, were the three bases on which authority is made legitimate to followers—the rational, traditional and charismatic bases. In defining these three bases, Weber remained fairly close to his ideas on individual action, but Weber rapidly moved to the large-scale structures of authority. Authority legitimized on rational grounds rests 'on a belief in the legality of enacted rules and the right of those elevated to authority under such rules to issue commands' (Weber, 1921/ 1968:215). Authority legitimized on traditional grounds is based on 'an established belief in the sanctity of immemorial traditions and the legitimacy of those exercising authority under them' (Weber, 1921/1968:215). Lastly, authority legitimized by charm is supported on the loyalty of followers to the exceptional inviolability, heroism or commendable

character of leaders as well as on the normative order sanctioned by them. All these means of legitimizing authority plainly imply individual actors, through processes (beliefs), and actions.

NOTES

Legal Authority

Legal authority can take a variety of structural forms, but the one that interested Weber most was the bureaucracy, which he considered as 'the purest type of exercise of legal

Ideal-Typical Bureaucracy

Weber depicted bureaucracies in ideal-typical terms. Although he was well aware of their failings, Weber portrayed bureaucracies in a highly positive way.

Despite his discussion of the positive characteristics of bureaucracies, here and elsewhere in his work, there is a fundamental ambivalence in his attitude towards them. Although he detailed their advantages, he was well aware of their problems. Weber expressed various reservations about bureaucratic organizations. For example, he was cognizant of the 'red tape' that often makes dealing with bureaucracies so trying and so difficult. However, his major fear was that the rationalization which dominates all aspects of bureaucratic life was a threat to individual liberty.

Weber was appalled by the effects of bureaucratization and, more generally, of the rationalization of the world of which bureaucratization is but one component, but he saw no way out. He discussed bureaucracies as 'escape proof', 'practically unshatterable', and among the same lines, he felt that the institutions tend to destroy once they are established. Similarly, he felt that individually institutions tend to destroy once they are established. Similarly, he felt that individual bureaucrats could not 'squirm out' of the hureaucracy after getting 'harnessed' in it. bureaucracy after getting 'harnessed' in it. Weber summarized that 'the future belongs to bureaucratization' (1921/1968-1401)

to bureaucratization' (1921/1968:1401), and since then, time has borne out his forecast. Given below are what Weber believed to be the key characteristics of the idealtypical bureaucracy:

- It comprises a continuous organization of official functions (offices) constrained
- 2. Each office has a particular and defined sphere of competence and capability.

 The office carries with it a set of obligation. The office carries with it a set of obligations and duties to perform different functions, the authority to fulfill these sections. functions, the authority to fulfill these functions, and the modes of compulsion
- 3. The offices are organized into a hierarchical system. 4. The offices may involve technical qualifications with them that require that
- 5. The staff which fills these offices does not own the production means associated with them. The staff members are all t with them. The staff members are allowed the use of those things which they
- 6. The incumbent is not allowed to appropriate the position; it always remains

7. Administrative acts, decisions and rules are formulated and recorded in writing.

Bureaucracy is one of the rational Bureaucracy is one of the rational structures which is playing an ever-increasing in modern society, but one may wonder with a playing an ever-increasing tive to the role in modern society, but one may wonder which is playing an ever-increase bureaucratic structure. Weber's clear and upage there is any alternative to the bureaucratic structure. Weber's clear and unequivocal answer was that there is no

possible alternative: 'The needs of mass administration make it today completely indispensable. The choice is only between bureaucracy and dilettantism in the field of administration.'

Although we might admit that bureaucracy is an intrinsic part of modern capitalism, we might ask whether a socialist society might be different. Is it possible to create a socialist system without bureaucracies and bureaucrats?

Weber believed that in the case of socialism we would see an increase, not a decrease, in bureaucratization. If socialism were to achieve a level of efficiency comparable to capitalism, 'it would mean a tremendous increase in the importance of professional bureaucrats' (Weber 1921/1968:224). In capitalism, at least the owners are not bureaucrats, but in socialism even the top-level leaders would be bureaucrats. Weber thus believed that even with its problems 'capitalism presented the best chances for the preservation of individual freedom and creative leadership in a bureaucratic world' (Mommsen, 1974: xv). We are once again at a key theme in Weber's work: his view that there is really no hope for a better world. Socialists can, in Weber's view, only make things worse by expanding the degree of bureaucratization in society.

A ray of hope in Weber's work-and it is a small one-is that professionals who stand outside the bureaucratic system can control it to some degree. In this category, Weber included professional politicians, scientists and even capitalists, as well as the supreme heads of the bureaucracies. For example, Weber said that politicians 'must be the countervailing force against bureaucratic domination' (1921/1964:1417). His famous essay 'Politics as a Vocation' is basically a plea for the development of political leaders with a calling to oppose the rule of bureaucracies and of bureaucrats. Similarly, in 'Science as a Vocation' Weber made a plea for professional scientists who can counteract the increasing bureaucratization and rationalization of science. However, in the end these professionals are simply another aspect of the rationalization process and that their development only serves to accelerate that process.

Traditional Authority

In his thinking about traditional authority structures, Weber used his ideal-typical bureaucracy as a methodological tool. His objective was to pinpoint the differences between a traditional authority structure and the ideal-typical bureaucracy. According to Webber, while legal authority stems from the legitimacy of a rational-legal system, traditional authority is based on a claim by the leaders, and a belief on the part of the followers that there is virtue in the sanctity of age-old rule and powers. The leader in such a system is not a superior but a personal master. The administrative staff consists not of officials but mainly of person retainers. Although the bureaucratic staff owes its allegiance and obedience to enacted rules and to the leader, who acts in their name, the staff of the traditional leader obeys because the leader carries the weight of tradition he or she has been chosen for that position in the traditional manner.

What interested Weber was the staff of the traditional leader and how it measured up to the ideal-typical bureaucratic staff. He concluded that it was lacking on a number of counts. The traditional staff lacks offices with clearly defined sphere of competence which is subject to impersonal rules. It also does not have rational ordering of relations of superiority and inferiority. Further, it lacks a clear hierarchy. There is no regular system of appointment and promotion on the basis of free contacts. Technical training is not a regular requirement or obtaining a position or an appointment. Appointments do not carry with them fixed salaries paid in money.

Weber used his ideal-type methodology not only to compare traditional to rationallegal authority and to underscore the most salient characteristics of traditional authority but also to analyse historically the different forms of traditional authority. A gerontocracy involves rule by elders, whereas primary patriarchalism involves leaders who inherit their positions. Both of these forms have a supreme chief but lack an administrative staff. They therefore lack a bureaucracy. A more modern form is patrimonialism, which is traditional domination with an administration and a military force that are purely personal instruments of the master. Still more modern is feudalism, which limits the discretion of the master through the development of more routined, even contractual, relationships between leader and subordinate. This, in turn, leads to more stabilized power positions that exist in patrimonialism. All four of these forms differ significantly from rational-legal

Weber saw structures of traditional authority, in any form, as barriers to the development of rationality. Weber argued that the structures and practices of traditional authority constitute a barrier to the rise of rational economic structures—in particular, capitalism—as well as to various other components of a rational society. Even patrimonialism—a more modern form of traditionalism—while permitting the development of certain forms of 'primitive' capitalism, does not allow for the rise of the highly rational type of capitalism characteristic of the modern West.

Charismatic Authority

The concept of charisma plays an important role in Weber's theories, but he had a conception of it very different from that held by most lay people today. Even though Weber did accept that a charismatic leader may possess exceptional characteristics, his sense of charisma was more dependent on the group of followers and the manner in which they defined the charismatic leader. To put Weber's position straightforwardly, if the followers define a leader as charismatic, then he or she is likely to be a charismatic leader irrespective of whether he or she really possesses any outstanding characteristics.

In this manner a leader is set anart from the ord. In this manner a leader is set apart from the ordinary people and respected as if endowed with supernatural, superhuman or at least expected as if endowed with supernatural, superhuman or at least exceptional powers or qualities which are not

To Weber, charisma was a revolutionary force, one of the most important utionary forces in the social world Whomas to the most important the rently revolutionary forces in the social world. Whereas traditional authority clearly is inherently conservative, the rise of a charismatic leader. conservative, the rise of a charismatic leader may well pose a threat to that system (as well as to a rational-legal system) and leader may well pose a threat to that system (what well as to a rational-legal system) and lead to a dramatic change in that system. What distinguishes charisma as a revolutionary force in the system. distinguishes charisma as a revolutionary force is that it leads to changes in the minds of actors: it causes a 'subjective or internal reactors' that it leads to changes in the minds of actors; it causes a 'subjective or internal reorientation'. Such changes in the made to 'a radical alteration of the central attitudes toward the changes may lead to 'a radical alteration of the central attitudes toward different problems of the World'. Although Weber was here addressing changes in the thoughts and actions of individuals, such changes are clearly reduced to the status of d changes are clearly reduced to the status of dependent variables. Weber focused on changes in the structure of authority is the changes are clearly reduced to the status of dependent variables. Weber focused on such a changes in the structure of authority, i.e., the rise of charismatic authority. When such a new authority structure emerges, it is likely to the charismatic authority. When such a lactions new authority structure emerges, it is likely to change people's thoughts and actions

The other major revolutionary force in Weber's theoretical system, and the one which he was much more concerned in Communication in the original is with which he was much more concerned, is (formal) rationality. Whereas charisma is an internal revolutionary force that changes the minds of actors, Weber saw (formal) rationality as an external revolutionary force at rationality as an external revolutionary force changing the structures of society first and then ultimately the thoughts and actions of individual to the structures of society first and in the then ultimately the thoughts and actions of individuals. Weber was interested in the revolutionary character of charisma as well as its structure and the necessity that its basic character be transformed and routinized in order for it to survive as a system of

In his analysis of charisma, Weber began, as he did with traditional authority, with the ideal-typical bureaucracy. He sought to determine to what degree the structure of charismatic authority, with its disciples and staff, differs from the bureaucratic system. Compared to that of the ideal-typical bureaucracy the staff of the charismatic leader is lacking on virtually all counts. The staff members are not technically trained but are chosen instead for their possession of charismatic qualities or, at least, of qualities similar to those possessed by the charismatic leader. The offices they occupy form no clear hierarchy. Their work does not constitute a career, and there are no promotions, clear appointments or dismissals. The charismatic leader is free to intervene whenever he or she feels that the staff cannot handle a situation. The organization has no formal rules, no established administrative organs, and no precedents to guide new judgements. In these and other ways, Weber found the staff of the charismatic leader to be 'greatly inferior' to the staff in a bureaucratic form of organization.

Weber's interest in the organization behind the charismatic leader and the staff that inhabits it led him to the question of what happens to charismatic authority when the leader dies. After all, a charismatic system is inherently fragile; it would seem to be able to survive only as long as the charismatic leader lives. But is it possible for such an organization to live after the leader dies? The answer to this question is of greatest consequence to the staff members of the charismatic leader, for they are likely to live on after the leader dies. They are also likely to have a vested interest in the continued existence of the organization: if the organization ceases to exist, they are out of work. Thus the challenge for the staff is to create a situation in which charisma in some adulterated form persists even after the leader's death. It is a difficult struggle because, for Weber, charisma is by its nature unstable; it exists in its pure form only as long as the charismatic leader lives.

According to Weber, in order to cope with the departure of the charismatic leader, the staff (as well as the followers) may adopt a variety of strategies to create a more lasting organization. The staff may search out a new charismatic leader, but even if the search is successful, the new leader is unlikely to achieve the same aura as his or her predecessor. A set of rules also may be developed that allows the group to identify future charismatic leaders. But such rules rapidly become tradition, and what was charismatic leadership is on the way towards becoming traditional authority. In any case, the nature of leadership is radically changed as the purely personal character of charisma is eliminated. Still another technique is to allow the charismatic leader to designate his or her successor and thereby to transfer charisma symbolically to the next in line. Again it is questionable whether this is ever very successful or whether it can be successful in the long run. Another strategy is having the staff designate a successor and having its choice accepted by the larger community. The staff could also create ritual tests, with the new charismatic leader being the one who successfully undergoes the tests. However, all these efforts are doomed to failure.

Theory of Power

According to Weber, power in a social relationship is the ability of an individual to achieve his or her will even against the opposition of others. Weber, to make his idea of power more useful for the study of history and society, gave domination as an alternative, or a

more carefully defined concept. Domination for Weber is 'the probability that certain specific command (or all commands) will be obeyed by a given group of persons' (Weber, 212). According to Weber, the characteristics associated with domination are:

NOTES

- Obedience
- Interest
- Belief
- Regularity

He believed that 'every genuine form of domination implies a minimum of voluntary compliance, i.e., an interest (based on ulterior motives or genuine acceptance) in obedience' (Weber, 212). A dominant relationship can be a parent-child relationship, employer-employee relationship, teacher-student issues, etc. According to Weber, a dominant power relation can comprise of the following four features:

- 1. In a dominant power relation, there is voluntary compliance or obedience. Individuals are not forced to obey, rather they obey voluntarily.
- 2. The people who obey voluntarily in a dominant power relation do so because they have an interest in obeying or at least believe that they have such an interest.
- 3. In a dominant power relation, there is a conviction in the legitimacy of the actions of the dominant individual or group (although it is defined by Weber as authority). according to its type treated as valid'.
- 4. Obedience in a dominant power relation is not accidental or linked with a short-term social relationship. Rather, it is a continued relationship of dominance and subordination so that regular patterns of inequality are set up.

According to Weber, when dominance works for a significant period of time, it becomes social structures of society. In Weber's understanding, temporary or transient types of with those types of power which are based on force, because force may not result in the definition, the circumstances of open conflict and force are also comparatively unusual. Weber construct of domination helps gives us a proper understanding of structured analysed properly through Weber's notion. Using Weber's notion we find that while in subordination usually consists of conflict, however, in such relationships the use of force subordination.

The British sociologist Giddens explained different levels of legitimacy, and how developing homogeneous types of conduct, it becomes usage. For Weber, when people start become customs. These may materialize within a group or society due to continued interaction, and need little or no enforcement by any particular group. Weber believes or customary; rather if someone does not conform to the convention, some kind of sanction may be the result. These sanctions may be mild in nature, like a disapproval, or

they may be serious, for example discipline or ostracism. To give an example, in a workplace what is considered office attire may become the norm, or be even enforced as a rule. Rules come to be enforced as a result of usage and custom and their violation may lead to sanctions being applied. A law comes into effect when a particular norm is taken up by an individual or a group which has the legal capacity and duty to enforce sanctions.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 4. What form of legal authority interested Weber the most?
- 5. State any two characteristics of ideal bureaucracy.
- 6. State the characteristics associated with domination.

5.4 THE PROTESTANT ETHIC AND THE SPIRIT OF CAPITALISM

According to Weber, capitalism was a modern phenomenon: a very sophisticated system of institutions, extremely rational in character, and the product of various developments atypical of Western civilization. In these terms, capitalism was unique—both in the sense that such a system never emerged spontaneously in the East. Capitalism is not as old as history and should not be confused with the various forms of capitalistic activity (speculative, commercial, adventurous, political, etc.) which were indeed known in previous periods of Western history and in the civilizations of the East as well. The emergence of the new socioeconomic system in the West could not be taken for granted as an automatic consequence of the growing rationalization of all aspects of life. According to Weber, capitalism had fought its way to supremacy 'against a whole world of hostile forces', and its victory over the traditional forces of the Middle Ages was not 'historically inevitable' or 'historically necessary'.

Weber stated, 'In the last resort the factor which produced capitalism is the rational permanent enterprise, rational accounting, rational technology, and rational law, but again not these alone. Necessary complementary factors were the rational spirit, the rationalization of the conduct of life in general, and a rationalistic economic ethic.' In his rationalization of the conduct of life in general, and a rationalistic economic ethic.' In his rationalization of the rational spirit of Capitalism Weber explored in a provisional book The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism Weber explored in a provisional way the source of the rational spirit and conduct. Although he was not altogether clear way the source of the rational spirit and conduct. Although he was not altogether clear on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, Weber does treat ethics as a 'necessary complementary factor'. What on this score, we see the rational spirit and conduct. Although he was not altogether clear way the source of the rational spirit and conduct. Although he was not altogether clear way the source of the rational spirit and conduct. Although he was not altogether clear way the source of the rational spirit and conduct. Although he was not altogether clear way the source of the rational spirit and conduct. Although he w

In The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism, Weber starts by drawing attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics attention to what he considers important differences between Protestants and Catholics and in terms of their inclinations towards technical, industrial, and commercial studies and

occupations. Protestants were much more inclined to pursue these studies and to be engaged in capitalistic enterprise while Catholics seem to prefer the more traditional humanistic studies. Among workers too, it appeared that Catholics remained in the more traditional occupations, for example crafts, while Protestants acquired industrial skills and even filled administrative positions. These differences could not be accounted for in terms of advantages of inherited wealth but rather had to be explained by the character of the religious education and values which the two groups received and communities. What seemed all the more striking to Weber about the smaller representation of Catholics in 'modern business life' was that as a minority, suffering certain political disabilities, they should have sought all the more forcefully to engage in economic activity (as had other minorities, notably the Jews).

Weber looked, in particular, at the Calvinist forms of Protestantism that developed from the ideas of John Calvin. Calvinists believed that only a small minority were destined by God for salvation and would join Him in heaven. The remainders were destined for eternal damnation. Nothing that people did during their lives could make any difference to their destiny, which reflected God's choice, and there was no way in which any individual believer could know whether he or she was destined for salvation or damnation. As a result, Calvinists experienced what Weber called 'inner loneliness'. They were on their eternal destiny. This are to whom they could turn for authoritative guidance on their eternal destiny. This extreme anxiety about their fate caused great uncertainty about how they should behave. Protestant ministers and teachers responded to this by stressing those other aspects of Calvinism that might help to resolve the anxieties of their narishioners. Calvin had acted in that might help to resolve the anxieties of their parishioners. Calvin had said that success in a person's calling might be seen as a sion that he or she was deather to sign that he or she was destined for salvation. A calling or vocation was the particular way of life to which one had be a salvation. A calling or vocation was the particular way of life to which one had been called by God. Calvin's followers concluded that God would hardly allow worldly success of would hardly allow worldly success to those whom he had damned. The Puritan sects of the 17th century—especially the Out. the 17th century—especially the Quakers and the Baptists—developed an ethic that saw success in an occupation business and the Baptists—developed an ethic that saw success in an occupation, business or profession as giving people some indication of whether they were saved or damped. The same of th whether they were saved or damned. They began to encourage their members to be diligent and hard-working in their read. diligent and hard-working in their work and disciplined in all aspects of their lives. Those who worked hard found that they were in all aspects of their lives. who worked hard found that they were, indeed, likely to be successful, and this helped to lessen their sense of anxiety about their destiny (Marshall, 1982).

Weber described this lifestyle as one of asceticism. The ascetic lifestyle involved work, discipline, the avoidance of hard work, discipline, the avoidance of waste, and the rigorous and systematic use of time. This rational and calculative attitude and the rigorous and systematic use of time. This rational and calculative attitude was applied in all aspects of life. In the Puritan world-view, eating and sexuality were calculated in all aspects of life. In the Puritan eites and, world-view, eating and sexuality were seen as stimulating the bodily appetites and, therefore, as things to be controlled Faction 1. therefore, as things to be controlled. Fasting, the avoidance of non-reproductive sex, and, outside marriage, a life of chasting, the avoidance of non-reproductive selfand, outside marriage, a life of chastity and celibacy were all seen as means of selfcontrol through which a mastery of the body could be attained.

The pursuit of these values by 17th-century merchants in the Puritan sects led to greater business success than their control merchants in the Puritan sects led them to greater business success than their counterparts in other religions. Their ascetic way of life stressed the avoidance of excession other religions. way of life stressed the avoidance of excessive income and wasteful or luxurious consumption, and this led them to plough book and the income and wasteful or luxurious consumption, and this led them to plough back their profits into their businesses and so to expand their scale of operations. Asceticism expand their scale of operations. Asceticism gave a new meaning to practical economic life. A distinctively modern view of commercial a new meaning to practical economic life. A distinctively modern view of commercial activity and an ethnic of hard work were encouraged, and it was this new outlook and an ethnic of hard work were encouraged, and it was this new outlook and orientation that allowed capitalist business enterprises to expand on an unprecedented and orientation that allowed capitalist business. The enterprises to expand on an unprecedented scale in the 18th and 19th centuries. The Protestant ethic, Weber argued, had given bind. Protestant ethic, Weber argued, had given birth to the spirit of modern capitalism.

In the favourable conditions provided by the nation states of western Europe in the 17th and 18th centuries, this spirit helped to produce modern capitalist system of production. This system rapidly spread across Europe and into the wider world. In the longer term, however, the success of the capitalist system undermined sacred, religious meanings. In expanding capitalist societies, Weber argued that individuals are forced to work by economic necessity, and not by any spiritual commitment to it as a calling. For most people there is simply no alternative to capitalist economic activity: if employers do not make a profit, then the pressures of competition will force them out of business; and if employees do not work hard, they will be sacked and replaced by those who will. The spirit of modern capitalism disappears, and modern life becomes increasingly empty and meaningless.

5.4.1 Religion and Social Change

In Weber's opinion, social structures could be changed by encouraging religious belief. His social action approach was connected with interpretive sociology, where the interpretation of beliefs leads on to action. In his work The Protestant Ethic and Spirit of Capitalism Weber stated that the faith that Calvinists had regarding their lifestyle and attitude for work blended perfectly with the need for capitalism in a stage of dynamic early growth. In a time where mass poverty and depravation was common, one means of surviving was through self-reliance; A Calvinist would invest whatever money he had made back into his trade, would not indulge in overconsumption and live a simple life. Thus Calvinists survived by combining the wealth they made with a godly lifestyle. For example, some Calvinists like Leonard Chamberlain became very wealthy and set up Trusts to fund social, educational and religious causes. Thus, Weber argues that as a result of such religious beliefs and resulting action, there was a direct effect on capitalist growth.

In his works Weber analysed religions from all over the world like Hinduism, Buddhism and Ancient Judaism. His argument was that a change of attitude and action might come from a continuing traditional stance to the one of change and investment. Weber tried to explain social change by looking at the forms of rationality in modern society. According to Weber, religion has no social function even under a developed capitalism. Although Weber believes that religion does retain some social role, such as observance in state occasions, and perhaps this is to keep a level of enchantment at state level, he asserts that religion is itself a part of the social change. Weber considered collective conscience in modern organic society as fragile; indeed he proposed that eventually religion would become not the worship of society but of individuals. In modern society it would be individuals who would be sacred. Therefore, For Weber religion would have moved away from a conservative social role inhibiting social change to none. Weber began among social groups and only had a partial systemic view; he regarded religion to be encouraging social change.

5.4.2 The Religion of China

Students of economic development in the West had stressed two factors, which, among others, have contributed greatly to the rise of capitalism: the great influx of precious metals and a significant growth in population. However, Weber observes that in the case of China similar developments were evident.

A typical city in China was fundamentally different from the Occidental one: it did not become a centre in which capitalist relationships and institutions could germinate, for

NOTES

it lacked political autonomy. Unlike the polis of antiquity and the commune of the Middle Ages, it had neither political privileges nor military power of its own. The Occidental city became sufficiently strong to repel an army of knights and was not dependent for its survival on any centralized bureaucracy. Political associations of merchant and craft guilds were nonexistent in the Chinese 'city', and legal contracts, either economic or political, could not be made. In short, there did not emerge a relatively independent bourgeois class centered in relatively autonomous towns (the fruit of prolonged struggle and revolts). Revolts were indeed common in Chinese cities but these were to remove specific officials or to change specific practices, not to guarantee the freedom of the city. These differences between the Occidental and Oriental cities can be traced to their different origins. The polis of antiquity was an overseas trading city, whereas in China trade was predominantly inland. And in order to preserve tradition, foreign trade and contact were limited to a single port, Canton. Furthermore, industrial development was not centered in the city where it could, as in the West, escape the control of traditional groups and interests. Thus the economic, political and formal-legal foundations of an autonomous and rational organization of industry and commerce were absent. Control of the rivers, in China as in Egypt and other ancient civilizations, led to some rationalization of the economy but was greatly limited due to religious and other conditions. River regulation, the basis of imperial authority, was assured not by empirical-rational means alone but by the conduct of the emperor who had to abide by the imperatives of the classical scriptures. If, for example, the dikes broke, this was evidence that he did not have the qualities of charisma demanded by heaven and therefore had to do public penitence for his sins. As in all large far-flung states with undeveloped systems of communication, administrative centralization remained negligible; nevertheless, this did not facilitate the growth of autonomous centres of power.

The dependence of the central government on its officials, and these in turn on provincial assistants, enhanced traditionalism; even the 'money economy contributed to the strengthening of traditional structures'. The officials became in effect 'tax farmers', to their superiors, and kept the rest. They were prebendaries who had a paramount interest in maintaining the existing socioeconomic conditions and hence the profits from obstacle to attempts at internal change. To become prebendaries they were dependent on the central government; once they became officials and received their assignments, indigenous elements of the provinces in which they were strangers.

The sib in China was so powerful that true alienation of land from it was impossible. It capitalism but these did not lead to modern rational, capitalistic enterprise. There was unmistakable beginnings in the commercial law of Italian cities.' In China, the growth of they invested their money in landholdings which enabled some of their sons to study so their own. In this way the whole familial community had a vested interest in the ancestor cult; ancestral spirits acted as mediators between their descendants and God.

Cities were mere urban settlements of farmers and 'there remained only a technical administrative difference between city and village'. A 'city' was the seat of the mandarin and was not self-governing; a 'village' was a self-governing settlement without a mandarin. And autonomous military power developed in contrast with the West, in the villages and not in the cities.

There were repeated power struggles between the literati and the priests, in which the former were always victorious. Yet, ironically, the literati constantly availed themselves of the Taoist's priestly and magical services, affording Taoist heterodoxy a recognized place in religious practice. Not only were magic and animism tolerated, they were systematized and rationalized so that they became a tremendous power in Chinese life. All sciences which had empirical and naturalistic beginnings were completely rationalized as magical and supernatural practices and rituals. The Chinese world, despite its secular and rational-empirical elements, remained enchanted with a magic garden. 'Demagnification' of religion, Weber believed, was carried out in the West most consistently and thoroughly by ascetic Protestantism; but the process had begun with the ancient Jewish prophets. Weber emphasised that this did not mean that the Puritans did not retain superstitious beliefs; it is obvious that they were superstitious looking at their history of witch trials. Rather, it means that Protestants came to regard 'all magic as devilish'. For Weber, then, one criterion of the rationalization of religion is the degree to which it has rid itself of magic. 'To be sure,' stated Weber, 'the basic characteristics of the "mentality", in this case the practical attitudes toward the world, were deeply codetermined by political and economic destinies.' Yet, in view of their autonomous laws, one can hardly fail to ascribe to these attitudes effects strongly counteractive to capitalist development.'

5.4.3 The Religion of India

Weber in India also saw many social and cultural conditions which, it would seem, should have given rise to modern rational capitalism. Warfare, finance and politics, for instance, had been rationalized, and the last of these even in quite 'Machiavellian' terms. Many of the older type of capitalist forms had at one time or another been in evidence: state creditors and contractors, tax farmers, etc. Urban development also seemed to parallel that of the West at many points. In addition, what Weber called rationality was prominent in many aspects of Indian cultural life: the rational number system, arithmetic, algebra, rational science and in general a rational consistency in many spheres, together with a high degree of tolerance towards philosophical and religious doctrines. The prevailing judicial forms appeared compatible with capitalist development; there existed an autonomous stratum of merchants; handicrafts as well as occupational specialization were developed; and, finally, the high degree of acquisitiveness and high evaluation of Wealth were a notable aspect of Indian social life. He regards Indian religion as 'one factor among many' which, he states cautiously, 'may have prevented capitalistic development'. Since there was no way of quantifying or weighing the elements, all one could do was to make as strong and as cogent a case as possible. If Indian religion had taken another form—e.g., equivalent to that of ascetic Protestantism—then, perhaps, a modern, rational type of capitalism might have developed there too. Since economic, urban, scientific and other developments were somewhat equivalent in India and the West, and modern capitalism emerged autonomously only in the latter civilization, the different religious ethos which took shape there must have made a significant causal contribution to the origin of the modern economic system.

NOTES

However, for Weber the difference is more than just the Protestant ethic; he suggests that despite the rational, scientific elements in the East, and the existence there of economic strata and forms seemingly conducive to the emergence of a modern rational economy, the East remained an enchanted garden. This meant that all the aspects and institutions of Oriental civilizations were permeated and even dominated by the magical mentality, which became a brake on economic developments in particular and on rationalization of the culture as a whole. On the other hand, Occidental civilization, already in its early stages of development, had undergone significant disenchantment, which has increased almost as a uni-linear development right to the present. This disenchantment or rationalization began with the scriptural prophets; but Christianity, Greek formal logic, Roman law, the medieval papal curia, cities and states, the Renaissance, the Reformation, the Enlightenment, the various bourgeois revolutions, etc., all contributed to the process which made Western civilization, as a whole, fundamentally different from that of the East. This fact is implicit and occasionally given explicit emphasis in Weber's works.

In actual fact, Weber's study of world religious embraces much more than religious phenomena and institutions. In effect, he takes the entire social structure of the society in question into his purview. In the case of India, clearly the caste system was of fundamental importance. The origin of the four main castes or categories—Brahmans, Kshatriyas, Vaishyas and Shudras—is shrouded in mystery; more is known about the proliferation of groupings, so that literally thousands of sub-castes crystallized in the course of Indian history. Basing himself on the best Indological sources, Weber sketches the process by which new castes form and other undergo schisms. With the increasing wealth of some strata numerous to be and other undergo schisms. With the increasing wealth of some strata, numerous tasks were defined by them as 'lower' and unclean so that eventually the native recident and the defined by them as 'lower' and unclean so that eventually the native recident and the defined by them as 'lower' and unclean so that eventually the native, resident population refused to engage in them. This made room for alien workers, whatever their room for alien workers, whatever their origin, who moved into these occupations and became a 'guest' neonle tolerated for the became a 'guest' people tolerated for the economic function they fulfilled. They were not at first properly a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at its properly at a part of the boot at a p not at first properly a part of the host village organization; they retained their own community organizations and had full in the community organizations. community organizations and had full jurisdiction over them. Certain ritual barriers were raised against these guest peoples. Well raised against these guest peoples; Weber calls them a pariah people. Eventually, through a variety of forms of transition. through a variety of forms of transition, a pariah people. Evenissis some of the formerly native Hindu comments a pariah people, having established itself in some of the formerly native Hindu comments are people, having established itself in the people in the people is the people in the people in the people in the people is the people in the people in the people is the people in the people in the people is the people in the people in the people in the people is the people in the people i some of the formerly native Hindu occupations, a pariah people, having established hold over these occupations and demand develops an interest in maintaining its hold over these occupations and demands and receives certain Brahmanical services.

The members of the pariah group under the members of the pariah group under the services. The members of the pariah group, underprivileged anyway, come to prefer a legitimate status to that of an alien people since coarse status to that of an alien people since 'caste organizations, like quasi-trade unions, facilitate the legitimate defense of both internal and a status to that of an alien people since 'caste organizations, like quasi-trade unions, facilitate the legitimate defense of both internal and external interests of the lower castes'.

The hope and promise which Hinduism held out to these negatively privileged strata helps to explain 'their relatively minor resistance in view of what one would expect of the abysmal distance Hinduism establishes between social strata'. Clearly, this is not the place to discuss the caste phenomenon in detail; what interests us here is on economic development. The caste system had essentially negative consequences for restrictions and prohibitions on social interaction. Rather, it was because the caste system because the caste system.

That order was quite flexible in the face of the requirements of the concentration impure were not the main impediment to industrial development. All the great religions, he suggests, have placed such restrictions on modern economy. It was the traditional,

anti-rational 'spirit' of the whole social system which constituted the main obstruction; and this, along with the 'artisan's traditionalism, great in itself, was necessarily heightened to the extreme by the caste order'. The anti-rational spirit became manifest in the prevalence 'of magic and in the role of the Brahmans, whose very power was connected with the increasing significance of magic in all spheres of life'. Other religious developments had significantly modified the character of Indian economic conditions and strata. If, for example, there was an Indian 'bourgeoisie', it was very weak for at least two reasons:

- There was the absolute pacifism of the salvation religions, Jainism and Buddhism, which were propagated, roughly, at the same time as the development of the cities. There was a sort of causal interrelationship between urbanism and the salvation religions.
- There was the undeveloped but established caste system.

Both these factors blocked the development of the military power of the citizenry; pacifism blocked it in principle and the castes in practice, by 'hindering the establishment of a polis or commune in the European sense'.

The bourgeoisie as well as the guilds had no independent military organizations and therefore could be repressed whenever a prince found it expedient to do so. The Indian town enjoyed no true self-government or autonomy. Also, apart from the implications which the sacred cow had for Indian animal husbandry, magico-religious practices retarded technical-industrial development. Often 'tools were worshipped as quasi-fetishes' along with 'other traditional traits'. 'This stereotyping of tools was one of the strongest handicaps to all technical development.' Indian religions, including Buddhism, had attained a highly technical virtuosity but this resulted in an extreme devaluation of the world—none of them enjoined the adherent to prove himself or his grace through action or work. Quite the contrary, the highest good was a contemplative flight from the world. Indian asceticism never translated itself into a 'methodical, rational way of life that tended in its effects to undermine traditionalism and to change the world'. Thus India, like China, remained an enchanted garden 'with all sorts of fetishism, animistic and magical beliefs and practices in rivers, ponds and mountains, highly developed word formulae, finger-pointing magic, and the like'. In contrast to the Hebrew prophets, who never made peace with the magicians, the Brahmins in the interests of their power position, not only recognized the influence of magic but rationalized it and made numerous concessions to the unclassical magicians; this despite the fact that ideally, according to the Classic Vedas, magic was to be suppressed, or at least merely tolerated among the masses.

Weber concluded that the general character of Asiatic religion was a particular form of gnosis, i.e., positive knowledge in the spiritual realm, mystically acquired. Gnosis form of gnosis, i.e., positive knowledge in the spiritual realm, mystically acquired. Gnosis form of gnosis, i.e., positive knowledge in the spiritual realm, mystically acquired. This 'knowledge was the single path to the 'highest holiness' and the 'highest practice'. This 'knowledge was the single path to the 'highest holiness' and the 'highest practice'. This 'knowledge far from becoming a rational and empirical means by which man sought with increasing far from becoming a rational and empirical means of mystical and magical domination success to dominate nature became instead the means of mystical and magical domination over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through over the self and magical domination success to dominate nature became instead the means of mystical and magical domination success to dominate nature became instead the means of mystical and magical domination success to dominate nature became instead the means of mystical and magical domination success to dominate nature became instead the means of mystical and magical domination success to dominate nature became instead the means of mystical and magica

NOTES

no emphasis was placed on 'this life'; Asiatic religion led to an otherworldliness. 'In Asia generally,' writes Weber, 'the power of a charismatic stratum grew.' The magical, antirational world had a profound impact on economic conduct and development could not be doubted.

The depth and tenacity of this magical mentality created conditions in which the 'lust for gain' never gave rise to the modern economic system which Weber called as 'rational capitalism'. What was notably absent from Asiatic religion therefore was the development which in the Occident ultimately broke the hold of magic over the minds of men and gave rise to a 'rational, inner worldly ethic'.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 7. What according to Weber is 'rational capitalism'?
- 8. Which was the polis of antiquity?

SUMMARY 5.5

- Max Weber, often referred to as the 'bourgeois Marx', became a sociologist 'in a long and intense debate with the bourgeois Marx', became a sociologist 'in a long and intense debate with the bourgeois Marx', became a sociologist 'in a long and intense debate with the bourgeois Marx', became a sociologist 'in a long and intense debate with the bourgeois Marx'. long and intense debate with the ghost of Marx', became a sociological and Gesellschaft (economy and a thic Gesellschaft (economy and society) and his concern with the protestant ethic showed that throughout his liest. showed that throughout his life he was engaged in the problems and issues raised
- Weber's entire sociology, if we accept his words at face value, was based on his conception of social action (There are a socia conception of social action (Turner, 1983). He differentiated between action and purely reactive behaviour. The action and now purely reactive behaviour. The concept of behaviour is reserved, then as now (Ritzer, 1975a), to automatic behaviour is reserved, then as now (Ritzer, 1975a), to automatic behaviour that involves no thought processes—a stimulus and response. Such balance of the involves no thought processes—a signory.
- stimulus and response. Such behaviour that involves no thought processingly. • Weber rejected the deterministic system of explanation as a result of his philosophy of science. The fundamental explanation as a result of his philosophy of science. The fundamental explanation as a result of his philosophe based on an interpretative comments formed by sociologists should always which be based on an interpretative comprehension of the subjective meanings which individuals provide to their actions
- Weber's sociological interest in the structures of authority was motivated, at least in part, by his political interests. Webs. in part, by his political interests. Weber was no political radical; he was almost as critical of modern capitalism as Mary hard. critical of modern capitalism as Marx but he was not an advocate for revolution.

 He wanted to change society gradualism the was not an advocate for revolution with in the He wanted to change society gradually, not overthrow it. He had little faith in the ability of the masses to accrete 'hetter'. ability of the masses to accrete 'better' society. Moreover, Weber also saw little hope in the middle classes, who he fall. hope in the middle classes, who he felt were dominated by shortsighted, petty
- Legal authority can take a variety of structural forms, but the one that interested Weber most was the bureaucracy, which he considered as 'the purest type of exercise of legal authority'.
- Weber depicted bureaucracies in ideal-typical terms. Although he was well aware of their failings, Weber portrayed bureaucracies in a highly positive way. • In his thinking about traditional authority structures, Weber used his ideal-typical between a traditional tool. His chicages, Weber used his ideal-typical bureaucracy as a methodological tool. His objective was to pinpoint the differences between a traditional authority structure and the ideal-typical bureaucracy.

- The concept of charisma plays an important role in Weber's theories, but he had a conception of it very different from that held by most lay people today. Even though Weber did accept that a charismatic leader may possess exceptional characteristics, his sense of charisma was more dependent on the group of followers and the manner in which they defined the charismatic leader.
- · According to Weber, power in a social relationship is the ability of an individual to achieve his or her will even against the opposition of others. Weber, to make his idea of power more useful for the study of history and society, gave domination as an alternative, or a more carefully defined concept. Domination for Weber is 'the probability that certain specific command (or all commands) will be obeyed by a given group of persons'.
- · According to Weber, capitalism was a modern phenomenon: a very sophisticated system of institutions, extremely rational in character, and the product of various developments atypical of western civilization. In these terms, capitalism was unique—both in the sense that such a system never emerged spontaneously in the East.
- · Weber concluded that the general character of Asiatic religion was a particular form of gnosis, i.e., positive knowledge in the spiritual realm, mystically acquired. Gnosis was the single path to the 'highest holiness' and the 'highest practice'. This 'knowledge far from becoming a rational and empirical means by which man sought with increasing success to dominate nature became instead the means of mystical and magical domination over the self and the world by an intensive training of body and spirit either through asceticism or, as a rule, through strict, methodological ruled meditation'.
- Weber wrote that 'In Asia generally, the power of a charismatic stratum grew.' Thus, that the magical, anti-rational world had a profound impact on economic conduct and development in Asia cannot be doubted.
- According to Weber, the depth and tenacity of this magical mentality created conditions in which the 'lust for gain' never gave rise to the modern economic system which Weber called as 'rational capitalism'.

5.6 KEY TERMS

- Verstehen: Verstehen essentially means understanding the meaning of action from the actor's point of view. To put it another way, it means to enter into the shoes of the other, and adopt a research stance that requires treating the actor as a subject, rather than an object of one's observations.
- Patrimonialism: A form of government where all the power flows directly from a leader is called patrimonialism. Such types of governments are autocratic or oligarchic in nature and keep out the upper and middle classes from power.
- Historical sociology: Sociological analysis based on historical sources-either primary (such as original documents in archives) or secondary (the written history produced by historians themselves).
- Social action: According to Max Weber, an action is 'social' if the acting individual takes account of the behaviour of others and is thereby oriented in its course.

Self-Instructional

ANSWERS TO 'CHECK YOUR PROGRESS'

1. The four ideal actions as stated by Weber are as follows:

- Traditional action
- Value-rational action
- Affectional action
- Instrumentally rational action
- 2. According to Weber, traditional action is that type of action which is a result of habit and thus is an unthinking action. Such action involves only some degree of logic and is routine in nature. As the name suggests in traditional action people act in the way like they have usually done in similar situations in the past.
- 3. In 1904 and 1905, Weber published one of his best known works, The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism.
- 4. Legal authority can take a variety of structural forms, but the one that interested Weber the most was bureaucracy, which he considered as 'the purest type of exercise of legal authority'.
- 5. Two characteristics of ideal bureaucracy are:
 - It comprises a continuous organization of official functions (offices) constrained
 - Each office has a particular and defined sphere of competence and capability. The office carries with it a set of obligations and duties to perform different functions, the authority to fulfill these functions, and the modes of compulsion needed to accomplish the job.
- 6. According to Weber, the characteristics associated with domination are:

 - Interest
 - Belief
 - Regularity
- 7. The depth and tenacity of this magical mentality created conditions in which the 'lust for gain' never gave rise to the modern economic system which Weber called as 'rational capitalian',
- 8. The polis of antiquity was an overseas trading city, whereas in China trade was predominantly inland. And in order predominantly inland. And in order to preserve tradition, foreign trade and contact were limited to a single post.

QUESTIONS AND EXERCISES

Short-Answer Questions

- Write a short note on traditionalism and rationality.
- 2. How has Weber defined 'charisma' in his analysis of charismatic authority? 3. State the features of a dominant power relation.
- 4. Write a short note on Weber's concept of religion in India.

Long-Answer Questions

- 1. Compare and contrast the four types of social action given by Weber.
- 2. Compare and contrast different types of authority propounded by Weber.
- 3. Give a broad overview of the connection between religion and the rise of modern capitalism.
- 4. Discuss the salient features of Weber's theory of power.
- 5. Analyse the basic characteristics of Weberian bureaucracy.
- 6. Elucidate the differences between charismatic authority and legal rational authority.

FURTHER READING

- Adams, Bert N., Rosalind Ann Sydie and R.A. Sydie. 2001. Sociological Theory. California: Pine Forge Press.
- Allan, Kenneth and Kenneth D. Allan. 2009. Explorations in Classical Sociological Theory: Seeing the Social World. California: Pine Forge Press.
- Calhoun, Craig J. 2002. Classical Sociological Theory. Hoboken, NJ: Wiley-Blackwell.
- Edles, Laura and Desfor Scott Appelrouth. 2010. Sociological Theory in the Classical Era: Text and Readings. California: Pine Forge Press.
- Jayapalan, J. 2001. Sociological Theory. New Delhi: Atlantic Publishers and Distributors.
- Ritzer, George. 2007. Sociological Theory. New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Turner, Jonathan H. 2007. Handbook of Sociological Theory. New York: Springer.

UNIT 6 KARL MARX

Structure

- 6.0 Introduction
- 6.1 Unit Objectives
- 6.2 Influence of Karl Marx on Sociological Theory
 - 6.2.1 Dialectical Materialism
 - 6.2.2 Historical Materialism
- 6.3 Alienation and Capitalism
- 6.4 Class Conflict
- 6.5 Theory of Revolution and Other Concepts
 - 6.5.1 Transitional Proletarian State
 - 6.5.2 The Dictatorship of the Proletariat
 - 6.5.3 Surplus Value
- 6.6 Summary
- 6.7 Key Terms
- 6.8 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'
- 6.9 Questions and Exercises
- 6.10 Further Reading

INTRODUCTION

In this unit you will learn about the Marxian discussion on the dialectical approach which he derived from Hegel and which in fact shaped all of Marx's work. Much of sociological thinking was dominated by the contrast of dialect with causal logic. The dialectic emphasizes that among the elements of social world there are no simple cause and effect relationships; fact and value do not seem to be divided clearly between a line; and there are no hard and fast dividing lines among phenomena in the social world. Marx devoted his attention to dialectical and critical analyses of capitalist society, despite his political orientation towards the creation of a communist society. His insights into actors and structure should be viewed in the context of his opinions on human nature, which is the basis for his critical analysis of the contradictions of capitalism. According to him, a disagreement exists between our human nature and work in the capitalist system. Workers get alienated from their labour because it does not belong to them, but rather to the Capitalist. Marx put forward most of his opinions in response to the quick changes taking place in Europe as a result of industrialization, primarily in Germany. He also studied the nature of the structures of capitalism and their adverse affects on the actors. He also elaborated on the pivotal role played by commodities in capitalism. Marx used the term 'rectification' to explain the process whereby social structure becomes naturalized, absolute and independent of human action. In this context, it can be said that capital is the most reified components in a capitalist society.

UNIT OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able to:

• Understand the contribution of Marx's works towards the evolution and growth of sociological theory

6.2 INFLUENCE OF KARL MARX ON SOCIOLOGICAL THEORY

Karl Marx was born in Trier, Prussia, on 15 May 1818. His father, a lawyer, provided the family with a fairly typical middle class existence. Both parents were from rabbinical families. But for business reasons the father had converted to Lutheranism.

In 1841 Marx received his doctorate in philosophy from the University of Berlin, a school heavily influenced by Hegel and the Young Hegelians, supportive, yet critical, of their master. Marx's doctorate was a dry philosophical treatise that bore little resemblance to his later, more radical and more pragmatic work. After graduation he became a writer for liberal-radical newspaper and within 10 months became its editor-in-chief. However, because of its political position, the paper was closed shortly thereafter by the government. The early essays published in this period began to reflect a number of standpoints that would guide Marx throughout his life. They were liberally sprinkled with democratic the naïve and dreaming of utopian communists, and those activists who were urging laid the groundwork for his own life's work:

Practical attempts, even by the masses, can be answered with cannon as soon as they become dangerous, but ideas that overcome our conviction, ideas to which reason has riveted our conscience, are chains from which one cannot break loose without breaking one's heart; they are demons that one can only overcome by submitting to them. (Marx, 1842/1977:20)

Marx married in 1843 and soon thereafter left Germany for the more liberal sphere of Paris. There he could the atmosphere of Paris. There he continued to grapple with the ideas of Hegel and the voung Hegelians, but he also encounted to grapple with the ideas of Hegel and the young Hegelians, but he also encountered two new sets of ideas—French socialism and English political economy. It was a light set of ideas—French socialism, English political economy. It was the unique way in which he combined Hegelianism, socialism and political economy. socialism and political economy that shaped his intellectual orientation. Also of great importance at this point was mastired. importance at this point was meeting the man who was to become his lifelong friend, benefactor and collaborator—Residue man who was to become his lifelong friend, benefactor and collaborator—Freidrich Engels (Carver, 1983). The son of a textile manufacture, Engels had become a control of the company of manufacture, Engels had become a socialist critical of the conditions facing the working class. Much of Marx compassion for the conditions facing the working from his class. Much of Marx compassion for the misery of the working class came from his exposure to Engels and his ideae In 1944. exposure to Engels and his ideas. In 1844 Engels and Marx had a lengthy conversation in a famous café. Engels said 'Original Engels and Marx had a lengthy conversation in the carne in a famous café. Engels said, 'Our complete agreement in all theoretical field became obvious ... and our joint work dates. 2. obvious ... and our joint work dates from that time (Mc Lellan, 1973:31) ... during this period Marx produced academic work that time (Mc Lellan, 1973:31) ... during that were period Marx produced academic works (many unpublished in his lifetime) that were mainly concerned with sorting out him. (many unpublished in his lifetime) that were mainly concerned with sorting out him. mainly concerned with sorting out his link to the Hegelian tradition (for example, and The German ideal. Holy Family and The German ideology), but he also produced The Economic and Philosophic Manuscripts of 1844 which is the Hegelian tradition. Philosophic Manuscripts of 1844, which better integrated all of the intellectual tradition in which he was immersed and which control with in which he was immersed and which foreshadowed his increasing preoccupation with the economic domain.

While Marx and Engels shared a theoretical orientation, there were many differences between the two men. Marx tended to be a highly abstract thinker, a disorderly

intellectual and very oriented to his family. Engels was a practical thinker, a neat and tidy businessman. They collaborated on books and articles and worked together in radical organization. Engels even helped and supported Marx throughout the rest of his life so that Marx could devote himself to his intellectual and political endeavours.

In spite of the close association of the names of Marx and Engels, Engels made it clear that he was the junior partner:

Marx could very well have done without me. What Marx accomplished I would not have achieved. Marx stood higher, saw farther and took a wider and quicker view than the rest of us. Marx was a genius.

(Engels, cited in McLellan, 1973:131-132)

In fact, many believe that Engels failed to understand many of the subtleties of Marx's work. After Marx's death, Engels became the leading spokesperson for Marxian theory and in various ways distorted and oversimplified it.

Since some of his writings had upset the Prussian government, the French government (at the request of the Prussians) expelled Marx in 1845, and he moved to Brussels. His radicalism was growing, and he had become an active member of the international revolutionary movement. He was also associated with the Communist League and was asked to write a document (with Engels) expounding its aims and beliefs. The result was the *Communist Manifesto* of 1848, a work that was characterized by ringing political slogans (for example, 'working men of all countries, unite!').

In 1849, Marx moved to London, and, in light of the failure of the political revolutions of 1848, he began to withdraw from active revolutionary activity and to move into serious and detailed research on the working conditions under capitalism. These studies ultimately resulted in the three volumes of *Capital*, the first of which was published in 1867 while the other two were published posthumously. He lived in poverty during these years, barely managing to survive on a small income from his writings and the support of Engels. In 1863 Marx became re-involved in political activity by joining the *International*, an international movement of workers. He soon gained dominance within the movement and devoted a number of years to it. He began to gain fame both as a leader of the *International* and as the author of *Capital*. But the disintegration of the *International* by 1876, the failure of various revolutionary movements, and personal illness took their toll on Marx. His wife died in 1881, daughter died in 1882, and Marx himself expired on 14 March 1883.

6.2.1 Dialectical Materialism

Many Marxists considered Dialects Materialism as the theoretical source of several types of Marxism. Marx never used this name which refers to the societal and economic types of Marxism. Marx never used this name which refers to the societal and economic transformation born of the material forces. Usually it is seen as the mix of Historical transformation born of the materialist conception of history') a name specified to Marx style in materialism (or the 'materialist conception of history') a name specified to Marx style in the study of society, economics and history. It is usually defined by the two declarations the study of society, economics and history. It is usually defined by the two declarations the study of society, economics and history of class struggle' (The communist history of all hitherto existing society is the history of class struggle' (The communist Manifest, 1848). Fundamentally it is described by the principle that history is the creation Manifest, 1848). Fundamentally it is described by the principle of philosophy of history, of class struggle and follows the universal Hegelian principle of philosophy of history, which is the growth of thesis into anti-thesis which is sustained by the 'Aufheben' which which is the growth of thesis into anti-thesis whereas simultaneously bringing it to an end.

Hegel's dialect focuses on the explanation of the growth and development of human history. For him truth was the product of history which passed through various moments including the moment of error or negativity which is the part of the development of truth. Compared to Hegel's idealism, Marxian dialectical materialism considers that history is not the result of spirit but consequence of material class conflict of the social order. Therefore, this presumption has basis in the materiality of societal survival. Dialectical materialism is also known as Diamat (short form for 'dialectical materialism') most likely used in 1887 by Joseph Dietzgen, a socialist tanner who was in touch with Marx. A formal reference to the phrase is also found in Kautsky's Fredrick Engel written in the same year, 1887. Georgi Plekhanov, the father of Russian communalism, afterwards used the term and therefore it came into usage in Marxist theory. Marx had stated on the subject of the 'materialistic conception of history' which has afterwards condensed to history materialism by Engels. He uncovered the 'materialist dialectic' not 'dialectical materialism' in his work Dialectics of Nature (1883). Diamat was discussed and analysed by a lot of Marxist thinkers, which resulted in a mixture of political and theoretical conflicts in the Marxist faction in universal and in the Comintern specifically.

Foreword

Marxism is a fundamentally materialist philosophy because the foundation of it is the belief that the overall account of everything is matter which is characteristic of reality. If empirical study is able to identify the whole aspects of matter, therefore, matter is accepted as the beginning and ending of all reality. An important part of Marxist thought is matter's independence in forming the course of nature which detaches dialectical materialism (the Hegelian dialectical method).

Marxism sticks to the triple laws of motion (originally proposed by the Greek thinkers and coded by Hegel). By means of these laws, Marxism tries to respond to the problems associated with both nature and humanity as well as tries to answer the query 'what is the beginning of energy or activity in nature?' Other such queries are:

- What is the basis of the continuous proration in the number of galaxies, solar system, planets, animals and all the realms of nature?
- What is the starting point of life, the beginning of species and the sources of
- What is the basis of regulation in society and the direction to which it is headed?
- Does the study of the past include an ending; if it is then what will it be?

By making use of triple laws of dialectics, Marx and Engels responded to all these queries. As an alternative of enforcing upon it, the laws were discovered inside the

Laws of Opposites

Marx and Engels began with the impression that everything in reality is a union of opposites. As a case in point, the main feature of electricity is a positive and negative charge. Also, the atoms are made up of protons and electrons united but are in essence opposing forces. So it is befitting to say that humans also have opposite qualities like humbleness and pride, selfishness and altruism and so forth. The Marxist conclusion is that everything 'contains two mutually incompatible and exclusive but nevertheless equally essential and indispensable parts or aspects'. The essential idea is that this union of onnosites in natural world is the feature which are opposites in natural world is the feature which makes every unit auto-dynamic in nature along with ensuring a continuous drive for movement and transformation. This motion

was analysed by George Wilhelm Hegel who stated that 'contradiction in nature is the root of all motion and of all life'.

More often than not this dichotomy exists in the natural world. A star is held collectively by the gravitational pull which is driving every molecule to the core, and an extremely high temperature is forcing the molecules to stay away as distant as feasible from the core. If either of any of the two pulls is totally successful the star cannot survive. If extremely high temperature is triumphant the star blows up into a supernova. Furthermore if gravitational pull is successful it implodes into a neutron star or black hole. Accordingly, live beings endeavour to stabilize inside and outside forces to sustain homeostatic, that is no more than a stabilization of contrasting powers, for example acidity and alkalinity.

Law of Negation

Here is a predisposition in environment towards continuously raising the numerical amount of the entire things. The law of negation was formed to explain this predisposition of natural world. Accordingly, Marx and Engels state that to organize to move forward or replicate a superior number, creatures are inclined in the direction of negating themselves. To say that the nature of opposing forces is inclined to negate the thing itself, at the same time as resulting in divergence in every part and giving them movement. Consequently creatures progress because of this energetic course of beginning and obliteration. This rule is generally made simple as the sequence of thesis, antithesis and synthesis.

Engels frequently referred to the example of the barley seed, which in natural process sprouts (which is the death of a seed or negation) and produces a plant, growing into ripeness and is negated after giving birth to barley seeds. So therefore, the natural world is continuously increasing from beginning to end in series.

In the social order, there is an example of class. The nobility, in this case, was wiped out by bourgeoisie and the proletariat was formed by means of bourgeoisie. This proletariat will eventually wipe out the bourgeoisie. This shows that never ending series of negation where every class produces its 'gravedigger', its heir, no sooner it finishes lying to rest its originator.

Law of Transformation

It states that constant quantitative growth leads to changes in quality by 'leaps' in the environment, resulting in production of a totally new variety or creature. This is the way in which 'quantitative development becomes qualitative change'. In the process of transformation, the rendering null and void of quality affecting quantity is also permitted.

This has many similarities to the theory of evolution. Marxist thinkers accomplished that creatures in the course of quantitative growth are in addition essentially able to 'leap' to new appearances and stages of realism. The rule shows that in a long duration of time, natural world builds up conspicuous transformations in course, all the way through a procedure of minute, roughly insignificant growths.

It is shown by the example of volcano explosion after the process of years of pressure adding up. When the magma cools, it will turn into a productive land where till that point in time there was none. As a societal case, years of stress among the contrasting groups in society becomes the cause of an uprising. The rule also happens in reverse. For example, introduction of better agriculture tools (changing quality) to farmland and these tools will help in producing bigger amount (changing quantity) of agriculture output.

Karl Marx

Lenin's Contribution

NOTES

Lenin was the foremost to provide a detailed description of dialectical materialism in Materialism and Empirio-Criticism (1908). It involves approximately three axes: (i) the 'materialist invention' of Hegelian dialectics, (ii) the historicity of moral philosophy designed to class conflict and (iii) the junction of 'laws of evolution' in physics (Helmholtz), biology (Darwin) and in political economics (Marx). Lenin positioned himself among historicist Marxism (Labriola) and a determinist Marxism, close to 'Social Darwinism' (Kautsky). Preceding values of matter and materialism were confronted by new findings in physics (including x-rays, electrons and the initial stages of quantum mechanics). Matter looked as if to be vanishing. Lenin diverged:

'Matter disappears' means that the frontier within which we have until now known, matter vanishes, as our understanding is becoming insightful and deeper; the qualities of matter are fading compared to previously which looked total, not changeable, and basic, and which are at the moment exposed to be comparative and distinctive only at certain levels of matter. For the sole 'property' of matter with whose recognition philosophical materialism is bound up is the property of being an objective reality of existing outside of the mind.

Friedrich Engels was next, whose contribution was followed by Lenin, who had noted that 'with each epoch-making discovery even in the sphere of natural science, materialism has to change its form (Ludwig Feuerbach and the End of Classical German Philosophy). Lenin's major effort was to place materialism as a practical philosophical viewpoint away from what he considered as the 'regular materialism' uttered in declarations like 'the brain secretes thought in the same way as the liver secretes bile' (attributed to 18th century physician Pieve Jean Georges Cabanis 1757-1808); 'metaphysical materialism' (matter is composed of immutable, unchanging particles); and 19th century 'mechanical materialism' (matter was akin to tiny molecular billiard balls intermingling according to uncomplicated laws of mechanics). The explanations of Lenin and Engels to these arguments were 'dialectical materialism' in which matter was implicitly considered in the wider logic of 'objective reality' and which was constant with new progress in science Societ at 1 with new progress in science. Soviet philosophy in itself was separated among 'dialecticians' (Deborin) and 'mechanists' (Bukharin).

Georg Lukacs Additions

History and Class Consciousness was published in 1923 by Georg Lukacs who was a Minister of Culture in short-lived Hungarian Carrier State of Culture State of Carrier State of Culture State of Carrier State of Minister of Culture in short-lived Hungarian Soviet Republic (1919). It had the explanation of dialectical materialism as the companion of this of dialectical materialism as the comprehension of society as a sum total and this explanation in itself was directly the comprehension of society as a sum total and this explanation in itself was directly the consciousness of the proletariat. In the opening chapter, 'What is Orthodox Marxism?' the consciousness of the proletariat. In the opening chapter, 'What is Orthodox Marxism?', the explanation of orthodoxy by Lukacs is specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and a specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and a specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and a specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and a specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as the specified as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and the specified as as the faithfulness to the 'Marxist method' and not to the 'dogmas'. 'Orthodox Marxism', therefore, does not imply the uncritical account to the 'dogmas'. 'Orthodox Marxism', therefore, does not imply the uncritical acceptance of the results of Marx's investigations; it is not the "belief" in this or that thesis it is not the "belief" in this or that thesis, nor the exegesis of a "sacred" book. On the contrary, orthodoxy refers exclusively to matter the exegesis of a "sacred" book. contrary, orthodoxy refers exclusively to method. It is scientific conviction that dialectical materialism is the road to truth and that its materialism is the road to truth and that its method can be developed, expanded and deepened only along the lives laid down because developed, expanded and deepened only along the lives laid down by its founders.

Lukacs condemned Revisionist effort to go back to this Marxist method. Similarly useer described Marxism and psychological back to this Marxist method. Althusser described Marxism and psychoanalysis as 'conflictual sciences'. Lukacs visualizes 'Revisionism' and political splits as intrinsic to Marxist premise and praxis, and for him dialectical materialism is the result of class struggle. 'For this reason the task of orthodox Marxism, its victory over revisionism and utopianism can never mean the defeat, once and for all, of false tendencies. It is an ever-renewed struggle against the insidious effects of bourgeois ideology on the thought of the proletariat Marxist orthodoxy is no guardian of traditions, it is the eternally vigilant prophet proclaiming the relation between the tasks of the immediate present and the totality of the historical process.'

He furthermore affirmed that 'the premise of dialectical materialism is, we recall, not men's consciousness that determines their existence, but on the contrary, their social existence that determines their consciousness...only when the core of existence stands revealed as a social process can existence be seen as the product, the hitherto unconscious product, of human activity'. Agreeing with Marx's views, the individualist bourgeois viewpoint of the theme was disapproved by him, which has been established on the voluntary and conscious topic. The importance of the societal relationships was emphasized by him. Survival and therefore, the whole world, is the result of human being's action; however, it can be perceived only if the dominance of societal progression on a person's awareness is acknowledged. The awareness of a person was cataloged as a result of philosophical spiritualism by him. Lukacs, in his thesis, does not control man's independence, on behalf of various types of sociological determinism to the contrary; this creation of survival is the likelihood of praxis. In July 1924, during the fifth Comintern Congress, this unorthodox explanation, nevertheless, which was preserved by him with affirming that 'orthodox Marxism' is faithful to the Marxist 'method', and not to 'dogmas', was criticized, beside with Karl Korsch's work by Grigory Zinoviev.

Stalin's Codification of Diamat

Stalin, in 1931, after his takeover, published a decree for deciding the issue of the debate between dialecticians and mechanists, which acknowledged dialectical materialism as related exclusively to Marxism-Leninism. It was encoded in Dialectical and Historical Materialism (1938) by specifying the 'Laws of Dialectics', which is the basis of specific subjects and especially of the science of history upholding the promise of compliance to the 'proletarian conception of the world'. So, Diamat turned into the authorized thinking of Stalinism and nearly attained the rank of state religious conviction.

Materialism in Dialectical Materialism

The argument of Marx talked about Epicurus and Democritus atomism, which is regarded at the same time as the founder, along with stoicism, of materialist viewpoint. Lucretius theory was well known to him. Dominance of material word is emphasized and matterlead thinking is the focal point of materialism. Also materialism affirms that the world is material, and all occurrences in the creation are due to 'matter in motion'. Further, all things are interdependent and interconnected and develop in accordance with natural laws. It also holds that the world exists outside us which is independent of our perception of it, and the content we think is the reflection of the materialism in our mind; and that the world is in principle predictable. 'The ideal is nothing else than the material world reflected by the human mind and translated into forms of thought,' Karl Marx stated in Das Kapital (Vol 1). Against Hegel's idealism, Marx endorsed a materialist philosophy; he 'turned Hegel's dialectics upside down'.

Therefore, Marx approved materialist values in opposition to Hegel's idealism. One should not be perplexed with straightforward materialism as Marx's materialist **NOTES**

92

NOTES

thinking: in reality Marx disapproved of classic materialism as an additional idealist thinking. According to the famous Theses on Feuerbach (1845), thinking had to discontinue 'interpreting' the humanity in never-ending metaphysical arguments, for 'transforming' the earth. This 'transforming' of the humankind was occurring because of the increase in the workforce activity as perceived by Engels in England (Chartist movement) and by Marx in France and Germany. Therefore, the dominance of class struggle lies in historical materialism. The wisdom of Marx's materialism thinking is that the philosophy must take position in the class struggle, or it will get reduced to religious idealism (such as Kant or Hegel's philosophies) which in fact comprises just principles, i.e., the material result of societal survival. Therefore, Marx's materialism made the way for Frankfurt School's critical theory, resulting in the combination of the values with the social sciences in an attempt to analyse the disorders of society. Nevertheless, dialectical materialism may be summarized to the Diamat conventional theory.

Dialectics in Dialectical Materialism

As a prescribed approach, the foremost notion of 'dialectical opposition or contradiction' has to be appreciated as 'some sense' disagreement between the objects involved in an openly related context. 'Dialectical contradiction' is not reduced to simple 'opposites' or 'negation'. This is the discipline of the common and theoretical rules of growth of nature, society and thought. The major traits are:

- 1. Interdependences of the things as the creation is not a detached combination of things isolated from each other but a vital whole.
- 2. Cosmos, nature and the natural world is in a condition of continued movement. All nature, from the smallest thing to the biggest, from a grain of sand to the sun, from the protozoa to man, is in a constant state of coming into being and going out of being, in a constant flux, in a ceaseless state of movement and change.

Friedrich Engels, Dialectics of Nature.

- 3. Irrelevant and unnoticeable quantitative changes lead to essential, qualitative changes in the process of development. The qualitative changes occur not gradually, but rapidly and abruptly in the form, rising from one state to another. For example water becomes steam at 100 degree (qualitative change) with a one degree increase in temperature (quantitative change) with differences beyond a certain point differences, beyond a certain point, pass into qualitative changes, 'Karl Marx,
- 4. Everything has within it the inner dialectical negations, which are the crucial source of activity, transformation and growth in the world.

Engels' Laws of Dialectics

Engels deduced the three laws of dialectics with his study of Hegel's Science of Logic.

- The rule of the harmony and disagreement of opposites
- The rule of the course of quantitative transformations into qualitative
- The rule of the reversal of the reversal

For both Hegel and Lenin the first of Engels laws was considered the indispensable trait of a dialectical knowledge of matter which began with the early Ionian thinker Heraclitus.

It was Aristotle, from which second law was used by Hegel, and was compared to the phrase scientist label "phase transitions". The idea was inherited by Aristotle, also by Hegel and Engels, from ancient Ionian academics and "phase transition" of water to steam is one of the major examples of quantity, into quality change.

The last and the third law is the special expression of Hegel. With this terminology (along with additional things) Hegel's dialect became well known throughout his lifetime.

Lenin's Elements of Dialectics

After reading Hegel's Science of Logic in 1914, Lenin made concise notes outlining three 'elements' of Logic in Summary of Dialectics.

- 1. The determination of the concept out of itself (the thing itself must be considered in its relations and in its development);
- 2. The contradictory nature of the thing itself (the other of itself); the contradictory forces and tendencies in each phenomenon;
- 3. The union of analysis and synthesis.

In additional progression of explanations, Lenin developed and argued that 'the transition of quantity into quality and vice versa' is a case in point of the union and the separation of opposites articulated cautiously as 'not only the unity of opposites, but the transitions of every determination, quality, feature, side, property into every other (into its opposite?)'. The relevance of the dialectic to history is taken up in Historical Materialism.

Marxist Criticism of Dialectical Materialism

Dialectical materialism was criticized by many Marxist academicians including Marxist thinkers like Louis Althusser or Antonio Gramsci who propounded a Marxist 'philosophy of praxis' in its place. Rest of the scholars in Marxist thinking returned to the original manuscripts of Marx and Engels and produced new Marxist theoretical proposals and ideas substituting dialectical materialism. In 1937, Mao Zedong propounded one more explanation in his essay On Contradiction, in which he discarded the 'laws of dialectics' and persisted on the complication of the negation. His manuscript motivated Althusser's effort on negation and it was a motivating subject matter for his famous essay For Marx (1965). Althusser tried to tone the Marxist thought of 'contradiction' by making use of the notion of 'overdetermination' from psychoanalysis. The teleological interpretation of Marx compared to Hegel's idealism was disapproved by him. Althusser built the notion of 'random materialism' (matérialisme aléatoire) compared to dialectical materialism, a shift which came from Althusser's scheme of 'anti-humanism', or the 'philosophy of the subject'. In an effort to solve the dilemma in a different way, Italian thinker Ludovico Geymonat made a historical epistemology from dialectical materialism. Althusser shortly supported the epistemological method and focused on the denial of the division among subject and object which resulted in making Marx's theory mismatched With its antecedents.

While dialectical materialism represents the philosophical bases of Marxism, historical materialism represents its scientific basis. It implies that in any given epoch, the economic relations of society – the means whereby men and women undertake production, distribution and exchange of material goods for the satisfaction of their needs – play an important role, in shaping their social, political, intellectual and ethical relationships. Marx applied dialectics to the material or social world consisting of economic production and exchange. A study of the productive process explained all other historical phenomena. Marx noted that each generation inherited a mass of productive forces, an accumulation of capital and a set of social relations which reflected these productive forces. The new generation modified these forces, but at the same time, these forces prescribed certain forms of life, and shaped human character and thought in distinct ways. The mode of production and exchange was the final cause of all social changes and political revolutions. Marx considered matter as being active, capable of changing from within. It was not

passive, needing an external stimulus for change, a conception found in Hobbes.

The theory begins with the 'simple truth, which is the clue to the meaning of history that man must eat to live'. His very survival depends upon the success with important of all human activities. Men in association produce more than men in isolation, has never accomplished that to the satisfaction of all its members, and has in consequence, history is economic. Marx saw evolutionary changes in the ethical, religious, social, and ideas, and therefore, action are subject to endless change. The chief motive force conditions of life. Human history, therefore, has a material basis.

The Marxist perspective postulates that the structure of society may be understood consists of the mode of production while the superstructure (the external build-up). The base and political structure, religion, morals, social practices, literature, art and culture etc. The mode of production has two components—forces of production and relations of of development in the direction of achieving the perfect society. Forces of production (human knowledge and skills). Men and women constantly endeavour to devise better development of technology. This is matched by development of human knowledge and skills as required to operate the new technology. Hence, there is the corresponding epoch are given by the pattern of ownership of means of social production. This gives

Marx talked of four stages of human history—ancient times, medieval times, development, development of the forces of production fails to make any dent in the changes in the nature of contending classes but they do not bring about an end of the class conflict. Change in the nature of contending classes is itself brought about by a

social revolution. When material productive forces of society come in conflict with the existing relations of production, these relations turn into their fetters. The new social class which comes to own new means of production, feels constrained by these fetters and overthrows the old dominant class in a revolution. As a result of social revolution, an old social formation is replaced by a new social formation. In this process, world contending classes are replaced by new contending classes but class conflict continuous on a new plan. This has been the case still the rise of capitalism, which will be overthrown by a socialist revolution leading to the eventual emergence of classless society.

Marx, in his analysis of history, mentioned the important role of ideology in perpetuating false consciousness among people, and demarcated the stages which were necessary for reaching the goal of communism. In that sense both the 'bourgeoisie' (the capitalist wealth owning class) and the proletariat (the working class) were performing their historically destined roles. In spite of the deterministic interpretation of history, the individual had to play a very important role within the historical limits of his time, and actively hasten the process.

Marx had a very powerful moral content in his analysis, and asserted that the progress was not merely inevitable, but would usher in a perfect society free of alienation, exploitation and deprivation. His materialistic conception of history emphasis the practical side of human activity, rather than speculative thought as the moving force of history. In the famous speech, Engels claimed that Marx made two major discoveries—the law of development of human history and the law of capitalist development.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 1. State the three laws of dialectics as developed by Engels.
- 2. Who provided a detailed description of dialectical materialism?
- 3. What does the Marxist perspective say about the structure of society?

6.3 ALIENATION AND CAPITALISM

Marx's thinking on this topic is rich and resists neat systematization. According to Marx, what is vital for the self-worth of human beings and the meaningfulness of their lives is the development and exercise of their essential human powers, whose focus is labour or production. Since these powers are historical in character, varying from society to society and (on the whole) expanding in the course of history, the degree to which alienation is a systematic social phenomenon also varies, as a function both of what society's productive capacities are and of the extent to which the human potentialities they represent have been incorporated into the lives of actual men and women. Generally speaking, the degree of systematic, socially caused alienation in a society will be proportional to the gap which exists in that society between the human potentialities contained virtually in society's productive powers and the actualization of these members. Thus the possibilities for alienation increase along with the productive powers of society. For as these powers expand, there is more and more room for a discrepancy between what human life is and what it might be. There is more and more pressure on social arrangements to allow for the lives of individual human beings to share the wealth of human capacities which belong to social labour. Marx's criticism of capitalism make it clear that he regards it as a social system in which social arrangements have failed utterly to accommodate the

According to the Communist Manifesto:

NOTES

The bourgeoisie during scarcely a hundred years of its rule has created productive powers more massive and colossal than all past generations together. The subjection of nature's powers, machinery, application of chemistry to industry and agriculture, steam navigation, railways ... what earlier century dreamed that such productive powers slumbered in the womb of social labor? (1) In contrast to this unprecedented progress at the level of social production, capitalism has utterly failed to translate its expanded powers into expanded opportunities for individual self-actualization. It has diminished rather than increased the extent to which individual laborers, their intelligence, skills and powers, participate in the potentialities of social production, as well as sharply limiting the extent to which the laboring masses share in its fruits. As Marx puts it in Capital: Within the capitalist system all methods of raising the productive power of labor are effected at the cost of the individual laborer ... they mutilate the laborer into a fragment of a human being, degrade him to an appendage of a machine, annihilate the content of this labor by turning it into torture; they alienate from him the mental and spiritual potentialities of the labor process in the same measure as science is incorporated into it as an independent power. (2) How do capitalist social relations frustrate the human need for self-actualization? Self-actualization and spiritual fulfillment usually do not mean much to people whose more basic physical needs are still unsatisfied. And it is an important tenet of Marx's theory that capitalism cannot exist without imposing a brutalizing poverty on a sizeable proportion of the human race. There are a number of passages in which Marx appears to be saying that the downfall of capitalism is inevitable not because under capitalism people are alienated or spiritually unfulfilled, but simply because beyond a certain point capitalism will prove incapable of supplying the working population with the basic conditions for physical survival. The bourgeoisie, he says, becomes 'incapable of ruling because it is incapable of securing its slaves even their existence within their slavery'. The proletariat will overthrow capitalism (and with it alienation) not in order to lead more fulfilling lives but merely in order to be certain of survival. Marx does, however, identify some features of capitalist social relations which lead specifically to the crippling of people's powers and the frustration of their needs for self-actualization. One principal theme in Marx's account of the way capitalism 'robs workers of all life content' is the special manner in which it accentuates the division of labor. Modern capitalist manufacture, says Marx, is carried on increasingly by a 'collective laborer', whose actions are the carefully engineered result of the activities of many men, women and children. The labor process is carefully analyzed, its various operations are 'separated', 'isolated', 'rendered independent', and then 'laborers are classified and grouped according to their predominant properties. If their natural specificities are the basis for grafting them onto the division of labor, manufacture, once it is introduced, develops labor powers which are by nature fitted only to a one-sided special functioning.' In this way, 'the individual laborers are appropriated by a one-sided functioning. In this man, function and annexed to it for life ... The habit of a one-sided function transforms them into its unfailing organ, while their connection with the collective mechanism compels them to operate with the regularity of the parts of a machine.' Yet 'the one-sidedness and even the imperfection of the detail laborer comes to be his perfection as a member of his collective laborer. But the process of capitalist manufacture not on of the well-rounded variety of powers and activities which they need to be full human beings; it also tends to render their specialties they need to be the state of th matter of developed skills or powers: 'Every process of production is conditioned which every by by certain simple manipulations of which every human being who stands and walks is capable. They too are cut off from their fluid connection with the contentpossessing moments of activity and ossified into exclusive functions.' Consequently, capitalist manufacture creates a positive need for mechanical, 'unskilled' labor, a need unknown to pre-capitalist handicraft manufacture: 'If it develops a one-sided specialty into virtuosity at the cost of the whole laboring faculty, (capitalist manufacture) also makes the absence of development into a specialty ... In (capitalist) manufacture the enrichment of the collective laborer, and hence of capital, is conditioned by the impoverishment of the laborer in his individual productive powers.' It is plain that Marx blames capitalist social relations, and not the technical requirements of modern industry, for the fragmentation of human beings and the impoverishment of their individual powers.

Capitalist society is characterized fundamentally by the fact that the means of production are privately owned by a minority of the members of society who, acting largely independently of one another, tend to employ these means in such a way as to maximize the profit each earns on the investment. The nature of the means of production, moreover, is to a considerable extent at the discretion of this capitalist class, since their investment choices ultimately determine the selection of these means from the range of possibilities afforded by the technical capabilities of society, and even exercise a certain influence on the rate and direction of technical developments. These choices, moreover, are in the long run not arbitrary or at the mercy of individual capitalists, but are tightly constrained through competition with other capitalists by the requirement of profit maximization. Those capitalists who choose methods of production which maximize profits will survive and flourish; those who make different choices will lose their capital and the social power it represents. But the division of labor and the nature of individual laboring activity are largely determined by the means and techniques labor must employ. Hence under capitalism the factors which determine the life activities of the laboring majority are not in its hands but in the hands of a minority whose interests are opposed to its own; and the choices made by this minority are constrained by a principle (profit maximization) which deprives people of the wellrounded variety of powers and activities which they need to be full human beings; it also tends to render their specialties themselves more and more mechanical, dehumanizing in nature, less and less a matter of developed skills or powers. Consequently, capitalist manufacture creates a positive need for mechanical, 'unskilled 'labor, a need unknown to pre-capitalist handicraft manufacture. It is plain that Marx blames capitalist social relations, and not the technical requirements of modern industry, for the fragmentation of human beings and the impoverishment

In Capital, Marx argues in detail that there is no such happy coincidence, that it is just the kind of production dictated by profit maximization which has led to the alienating division of labor he describes. Marx believes that far from being incompatible with the technical requirements of modern industry, the potentiality for varied, well rounded human activity is inherent in modern scientific manufacture itself, and will begin to appear naturally as soon as production comes to be regulated consciously by the workers instead of being driven blindly by dead capital's vampire-like thirst for profit at the expense of human life. 'The nature of large industry', he says, 'conditions change of labor, fluidity of function, allsided mobility of the laborer'. Every step in technical progress demonstrates this fact by changing the laboring function required for manufacture, thus rendering whole categories of detail laborers (who have been trained only for one function) productively superfluous, and (under capitalist conditions) doing away with their only marketable skill. 'Change of labor' and 'fluidity of function' are not, however, inherently destructive or crippling. On the contrary, they represent precisely the potentiality for all-sided human development whose suppression under capitalism is a chief cause of alienation: But if change of labor now imposes itself as an overpowering natural law ... large industry through its catastrophes makes it a question of life or death to recognize the change of labor and hence the greatest

possible many-sidedness of the laborer as a universal law of social production, and adapt its relation to the normal actuality of this law; ... to replace the partial individual, the mere carrier of a detail function, with the totally developed individual, fit for the changing demands of labor, for whom different social functions are only so many modes of activity relieving one another.

Capitalism and Freedom

Marx's adherence to this notion of freedom is explicit: to be free 'in the materialistic sense' is to be 'free not through the negative power of avoiding this and that, but through the positive might of making one's true individuality count'.

In most modern thinkers before Marx, however, the conception of positive freedom is given a predominantly individualistic and moralistic interpretation. To be sure, they note that the exercise of this freedom requires the satisfaction of certain social (especially political) conditions. But they conceive self-determination itself chiefly as the inner volitional disposition of individual human agents, their mastery over their impulses and passions through rational self-knowledge and moral fortitude. Given Marx's materialist conception of human beings as socially productive beings, he cannot be content with an introverted, spiritualistic sort of self-determination. For Marx, true self-determination must rather consist in the imposition of human control on the social conditions of human

Marx insisted that social institutions and relations of production are not facts of nature but historically transient social forms which are the products of human activity every bit as much as wheat, cloth or machinery. He does so in part to give the lie to those who would defend existing institutions by declaring them unalterable; but his purpose is also to make clear how much is required if human beings are to have genuine freedom or self-determination. If social relations are human products, then people cannot be accounted free until they create these relations with full consciousness of what they be (as Locke says) subject to the arbitrary will of others; it requires also that the social relations in which they stand should be products of their own will. To recognize this fully is already to see through the sophistry which represents capitalist society as free because its relationships result not from coercive laws or the will of rulers but (apparently) by accident, from unregulated economic decisions made by individuals.

Freedom for Marx requires the conscious production of people's social relations, it is something which can be achieved only in community with others, and cannot be attained by retreating into oneself or by the exercise of one's self-determination within the confines of a jealously guarded 'private domain' in which society does not interfere. Yet Marx does not neglect to emphasize the complementary point that no society can be free unless it 'gives to each the social room for his essential life expression'. There can hoice be no genuine freedom unless men and women have the opportunity to exercise choice over their own lives and develop their individuality fully and freely. Marx is the consistent foe of political repression, press censorship and other such measures which curb the free development and expression of individuals. He has only contempt for any brand of communism which would turn the state or community into 'the universal capitalist' by imposing a uniform, impoverished mode of life on all members of society alike. There can be no doubt that for Marx individual liberty is necessary to a free society. But it is equally evident, to Marx at least, that the liberty proclaimed by bourgeois liberalism is not sufficient for genuine (that is, positive) freedom. Human freedom can be attained only when people's social relations are subject to conscious human control.

Therefore, it is only in communist society that people can be truly free, because human control over social relations can only be collective control, and only in communist society can this control be exercised by and for all members of society: Communism, says Marx, 'consciously treats all natural (naturwüchsig) presuppositions as creations of earlier human beings, divesting them of their natural character (Naturwüchsigkeit) and subjecting them to the might of the united individuals'. Only communist society can do this, because communist society will be a classless society, in it people will 'participate in society just as individuals.

Further, because individual self-expression and self-actualization are possible only through the capitalist division of labour, even individual freedom will become possible only with the collective human control over people's conditions of life. Only within the community has each individual the means of cultivating his abilities on all sides; hence personal freedom becomes possible only within the community. Marx does not conceive of social control over the means of production as the exclusion of individuals from ownership of what they produce and use. On the contrary, it is capitalism which involves such exclusion, since it delivers the means and objects of production over to a class of non-workers. Communism, as Marx sees it, will be a system of 'individual property for the producer', based on 'cooperation and the possession in common of land and the means of production'. The means of production must be owned collectively, because in modern industry labour is directly social, and the disposition of the means of production is always an act affecting society as a whole. Such acts, in Marx's communism, will be performed consciously. Decisions about them will be made democratically, by society as a whole, and not by a privileged class, acting contrary to the interests of the labouring majority and subject to the alien constraint of profit-maximization. Marx's critique of capitalism is based on some familiar philosophical value conceptions such as selfactualization and positive freedom.

Most of these issues are empirical ones, but this does not mean that they are clear cut or easily resolved. Any assessment seasoned with the proper scholarly caution would probably be inconclusive. It is unlikely that anyone, in Marx's time or today, knows enough to be entitled to a strong opinion for or against what Marx says about alienation and its social causes. If many people do hold strong opinions, this is largely because the only alternative to committing oneself in practice for or against Marx would be to take no effective stand whatever on the social reality around us.

Marx's account of alienation in capitalist society aims at substantiating three principal theses:

- 1. The vast majority of people living under capitalism are alienated.
- 2. The chief causes of this alienation cannot be removed so long as the capitalist
- 3. Alienation as a pervasive social phenomenon can and will be abolished in a post capitalist (socialist or communist) mode of production.

These three theses are obviously interrelated. Here, (1) is more or less presupposed by both (2) and (3). But (1) itself, as Marx understands it, is also dependent on (2) and (3). (3), and on his grounds for holding them. In support of (1), a Marxist might cite widespread feelings of disorientation and dissatisfaction among people living in capitalist societies, or he might point to the preoccupation of philosophers, artists, social thinkers and popular Consciousness with the problem of alienation, whether in an overtly Marxian or in various non-Marxian forms. But these considerations, however well substantiated, would not strictly show that alienation, as Marx understands it, exists in capitalist society.

NOTES

By the same token, a critic of Marx cannot successfully rebut (1) merely by arguing that people in capitalist societies are on the whole satisfied with their lives, even if a convincing case for this could be made out. Alienation, as Marx conceives of it, is not fundamentally a matter of consciousness or of how people in fact feel about themselves or their lives. Alienation is rather a state of objective unfulfillment of the frustration of really existing human needs and potentialities. The consciousness people have of this unfulfillment is merely a reflection of alienation, at most a symptom or evidence of it. Marx's real grounds for believing that people in capitalist society are alienated is not that they are conscious of being alienated, but rather the objective existence of potentialities for human fulfillment that must be frustrated as long as the capitalist mode of production prevails. Marx has no very definite conception of post-capitalist society or of the possibilities for fulfillment which he believes will be actualized in it. Hence Marx does not believe (3) because he has some clear idea of the ways in which socialism or communism will provide people with opportunities for self-actualization. Rather, he seems to believe because he is confident that people can achieve a fulfilling life when the main obstacles to it are removed, and because he thinks he has identified these obstacles: they are the outmoded social relations of the bourgeois society.

Marx's confidence in the human potential of modern science and technology is initially plausible. To reject it is to embrace the paradox that increasing people's powers, their self-understanding and their interdependence has no tendency to enrich their lives, their freedom and their community. The burden of proof seems to be on anyone who would defend such paradoxes. It is not obvious that events in our century have rendered them more defensible than they were in Marx's time. Especially important for Marx's conception of our potentialities for freedom is his belief that the values of individuality and community are reconcilable, that post-capitalist society can simultaneously achieve greater individual autonomy and greater social unity than people's productive powers

Marx's critics have been particularly suspicious of his silence concerning the social decision procedures through which free individuals are to achieve the rational collective regulation of their associated labour. At least since Rousseau, philosophers and political theorists have set themselves the problem of finding a form of human association which could unite individuals, putting the common might of society at the disposal of each while at the same time leaving all completely free to follow a self-

Marx does say very little about the political or administrative structure of postcapitalist society, beyond insisting that it will be democratic, and will involve control by 'society itself' rather than by a separate political mechanism or state bureaucracy. Fundamentally, nonetheless, he does not view the problem as a procedural one. For Marx, the main impediment both to individual freedom and social unity is the division of society into oppressed and oppressing classes. Evidently, as long as we tacitly assume a class society, the objectives of freedom and community will look both disjointedly unattainable and diametrically antagonistic. In a society where one individual's freedom is not essentially another's slavery, and where people have no objectives to use community as an excuse for advancing some people's interests at the expense of others, questions of social decision-making will not appear to people in the form of theoretical paradoxes

Marx also refuses to address himself to procedural questions because he regards them as premature. Such questions presuppose that we who ask them are all people of good will, pursuing a disinterested search for the right way to live together. They presuppose also that the object of such a search is, at least in its fundamentals, something which can be determined independently of detailed information about the technical resources available to society as regards its material production. Both presuppositions, in Marx's view, are false. As long as class society persists, the viability of any political mechanism will necessarily be a function not of its suitability for promoting genuine liberty or community, but only of the class interests it serves. Only after the abolition of class society can people begin to decide, on the basis of the productive capacities then at their disposal, how they will live together as free individuals. We have been considering challenges to Marx's account of capitalist alienation based on the denial that people in capitalist society are really alienated. But many of Marx's critics might be prepared to admit that alienation is a serious problem of modern society. The question remains whether it is capitalist social relations as such which are responsible for it.

Marx does believe that alienation can be overcome in a modern, complex and industrialized society. But he is not necessarily committed to denying that there might be causes of alienation other than those specifically identified by his theory. The main burden of Marx's message is that capitalist social relations are the most pervasive and Obvious cause of alienation, which must be abolished first, before lesser or more hidden causes can be dealt with. But there is no reason why Marx might not grant that such traditional social ills as religious fanaticism, racism and sexual oppression also contribute to alienation, and would have to be fought against even under socialism. Marx's explanation of alienation might also be challenged in some of its details. It is arguable, for instance, that Marx's views about the capitalist division of labour, whatever truth they might have had in his own century, are now obsolete.

Certainly it would be difficult to maintain that capitalism still exhibits a tendency to turn all labour into the unskilled mechanical sort, to 'make the absence of development into a specialty'. But even if this point is no longer defensible, Marx's explanation of alienation in terms of the capitalist division of labour may still be tenable. For the constraint of profit-maximization may still exercise a powerful (and harmful) effect on the nature of labouring activity, and inhibit the development of a well-rounded humanity on the part of workers. If this is so, then Marx's explanation of alienation in terms of the capitalist division of labour may still be essentially correct, even if the specific details of his account are not. Marx is always the first to insist that capitalism is not an immutable system, but One which is undergoing constant change. It would not be inconsistent with his views to recognize that his account of alienation in 19th century capitalist society might not be applicable in detail to its descendants in later centuries.

Commodity Production

The basis of all of Marx's work on social structures, and the place in which that work is most clearly tied to his views on human potential, is in his analysis of commodities. As Georg Lukacs put it, 'the problem of commodities ... central, structural problem of capitalist society' (1922/1968:83).

Marx's conception of commodity was rooted in his materialist orientation with its focus on the productive activities of actors. As we saw earlier, it was Marx's view that in the in their interaction with nature and with other actors, people always produce the objects

102

that they need in order to survive; objectifications is a necessary and universal aspect of human life. These objects are produced for use by oneself or by others in the immediate environment—they are use values. The objects are the products of human labour and cannot achieve an independent existence because they are controlled by the actors.

However, in capitalism this process of objectification takes on a new and dangerous form. Instead of producing for themselves or their immediate associates, the actors produce for someone else (the capitalist). The products, instead of being used immediately, are exchanges in the open market for money (exchange values). While people produce objects in capitalism, their role in producing commodities, and their control over them, becomes mystified. Initially they are led to assume that these objects and the market for them possess an independent existence. Thereafter this belief changes into reality as the objects and their market become real and independent phenomena. 'The commodity becomes an independent, almost mystical external reality' (Marx/1967:35).

Fetishism of Commodities

With the development of commodities, arrives the process labelled by Marx as the fetishism of commodities. The basis of this process is the labour which gives commodities their value. The fetishism of commodities comprises the process by which actors forget that it is their labour which provides the commodities their value. They start believing that value is generated by the natural properties of the things themselves or that the impersonal operation of the market is the source of commodities value. Thus the market takes on a function in the eyes of the actors that in Marx's terms, 'A definite social relation between men ... assumes, in their eyes, the fantastic form of a relation between things' (1867/ 1967:72). Granting reality to commodities and the market, the individual in capitalism

Therefore, a commodity possesses a mysterious nature, just because in it the character of men's labour appearance. social character of men's labour appears to them as an objective character imprinted on the product of that labour It is because the product of the product o the product of that labour. It is because the relations of the producers to the sum total of their own labour are presented to them in the sum total of their own labour are presented to them in the form of social relations that do not exist between themselves, but between the products of their labour.

The beauty of Marx's discussion of commodities and their fetishism is that it us from the level of the individual actor and their fetishism is that it takes us from the level of the individual actor and action to the level of large-scale social structures. That is, people endowed with crantile and action to the level of large-scale social structures. That is, people endowed with creative minds interact with other people and nature to produce objects, but this natural produce in nature to produce objects, but this natural process results in something grotesque in capitalism. The fetishism of commodities in something grotesque and the capitalism. capitalism. The fetishism of commodities imparts to them and to the marketplace and independent objective reality that is external to, and coercive of, the actor.

The concepts of commodities and fetishism of commodities would appear to be of limited sociopolitical use. The concepts seem to be restricted to the sociopolitical use. The concepts seem to be restricted to the economic realm, i.e., to the end result of productive activity. Yet productive end result of productive activity. Yet productive activity can—indeed must—be looked at more broadly if we are to grasp the whole of Management of the control of the contr at more broadly if we are to grasp the whole of Marx's meaning as well as its application to sociology. We need to understand that people to sociology. We need to understand that people produce not only economic objects (food, clothing, shelters) but also social relational produce not only economic objects. (food, clothing, shelters) but also social relationships and, ultimately, social structures.

Looked at in this way, the fetishism of commodiate and, ultimately, social structures. Looked at in this way, the fetishism of commodities and, ultimately, social structure of reification (Lukacs, 1922/1968). Reification (Lukacs, 1922/1968). Reification (Lukacs, 1922/1968). of reification (Lukacs, 1922/1968). Reification can be thought of as the process of coming to believe that humanly created social forms to believe that humanly created social forms are natural, universal and absolute and, as a result, those social forms do in fact acquired. a result, those social forms do in fact acquire these characteristics. The concept of

reification implies that people believe that social structures are beyond their control and unchangeable. This belief often comes to be a self-fulfilling prophecy. Then the structures actually do acquire the character people endowed them with. By using this concept, we can see that people reify not only commodities but also the whole range of social structures.

We can find the groundwork for a broader concept of reification in Marx's own discussion of labour. Basically Marx argued that as a social phenomenon, labour becomes a commodity under the peculiar circumstances of capitalism. 'Labor-power can appear in the market as a commodity, only if and so far as, its processor, the individual whose labor-power it is, offers it for sale, or sells it, as a commodity' (1867/1967:168). Once we admit the possibility of one social phenomenon (labour) becoming reified, it becomes possible for a wide range of other social phenomena to take on the same characteristic (Lefebvre, 1968:16). Just as people reify commodities and other economic phenomena (for example, the division of labour (Rattansi, 1982; Walliman, 1981) they also reify religious (Barbalet, 1983:47), political and organization structures. Marx made this point in reference to the state: 'And out of this very contradiction between the individual and the community the latter takes and independent form as the State, divorced from the real interest individual and community' (cited in Bender, 1970:176).

Marx had a few things to say about the range of reified social structures but he focused primarily on the structural components of the economy. It is these economic structures that Marx saw as causing alienation by breaking down the natural interconnectedness of people and nature.

Capital

The most general economic structural element in Marx's work is capital or the capitalist system. As an independent structure, capital (through the actors who operate on his behalf, the bourgeoisie) exploits the workers, who were and are responsible for its creation. Marx talked of the power of capital appearing a power endowed by Nature—a productive power that is immanent in 'Capital' (1867/1967). Thus people tend to reify capital by believing that it is natural for the capitalist system that they have forgotten they produced through their labour and have the capacity to change 'by means of its conversion into an automation, the instrument of labor confronts the laborer, during the labor process, in the shape of capital, of dead labor, that dominates, and pump away, living labor-power' (Marx, 1867/1967:423). This is what led Marx to conclude that capitalism is an inverted World.

Before we get to a discussion of some of Marx's economic ideas, the reader should be reminded that this is a book in sociological, not economic, theory. Thus, the economic ideas are introduced in order to illustrate underlying and more basic sociological ideas.

Circulation of Commodities

Marx discussed not only the character of capital in general but also the character of more specific components of the capitalist system. For example, Marx examined the circulation of commodities, which he considered 'the starting-point of capital' (1867/ 1967:146). Marx discussed two types of circulation of commodities. Both represent the Sum total of patterned economic relationships that are external to, and coercive of, the actor. One of these types of circulation—Money-Commodities-Money (M-C-M)—is characteristic of capital; the other—Commodities-Money-Commodities (C-M-C)—is not.

NOTES

104

In the simple circulation of commodities, the circuit C-M-C predominates. An example of C-M-C would be the fisherman who sells his catch and then uses the money to buy bread. In a society characterized by the simple circulation of commodities, exchange is accomplished by 'the conversion of the commodity into money, and the re-conversion of the money into a commodity' (Marx, 1867/1967:105). This circuit, however, does not exist in isolation; it is inextricably interrelated to similar circuits involving other commodities. This type of exchange process 'develops a whole network of social relations spontaneous in their growth and entirely beyond the control of the actors' (Marx, 1867/1967:112).

The simple circulation of commodities that is characterized by the circuit C-M-C can be considered the second historical type of circulation of commodities. Barter is the first historical form. Both of these circuits eventually lead to the circulation of commodities under capitalism, which is characterized by the circuit M-C-M.

In the capitalist circuit, referred to by Marx as 'buying in order to sell' (1867) 1967:147), the individual actor buys a commodity with money and in turn exchanges it for money. Here our hypothetical fisherman buys new nets with his profits in order to increase his future profits. This circuit, similar to the circuit under the simple circulation of commodities, is characterized by two antithetical yet complementary phases. At one and the same time one person's modifies and the same time, one person's purchase is another's sale. The circulation of commodities under capitalism begins with a purchase is another's sale. under capitalism begins with a purchase is another's sale. The circulation of commodities under capitalism begins with a purchase is another's sale. The circulation of commodities under capitalism begins with a purchase (new nets) and ends with a sale (a large catch of fish). Furthermore, the end of this air in the end of the end of this air in the end of this air in the end of this air in the end of the end of this air in the end of the end o of fish). Furthermore, the end of this circuit is not the consumption of the use value, as it is in the simple circulation of comments. is in the simple circulation of commodities. The end is money in an expanded form, money that is qualitatively identical to the consumption of the use value of the use value of the consumption of the use value of money that is qualitatively identical to that at the beginning of the circuit but quantitatively different (Marx, 1867/1967:150)

The importance of the M-C-M circuit, from our point of view, is that it is an even abstract process than C-M-C. The 's-rel' with more abstract process than C-M-C. The 'real' commodity declines in significance with the result that the essence of capital is read. the result that the essence of capital is reduced ultimately to the 'unreal' circulation of money. This greater abstractness makes as it money. This greater abstractness makes reification easier, with the result that the system is even more likely to become external to and is even more likely to become external to and coercive of actors.

Marx also analysed the process by which private property becomes reified capitalism.

In his view, of course private property like the set. In his view, of course private property, like the other structure components of capitalism, is derived from the labour of workers. 'Private is derived from the labour of workers. 'Private property is thus the product, the result, the necessary consequences, of alienated labour of workers to the necessary consequences, of alienated labour of the external relation of the worker to nature and to himself' (Marx, 1932/1964-117). IT nature and to himself' (Marx, 1932/1964:117). However, workers lose sight of, ultimately control over, this fact instead of controlling prime and to himself' (Marx, 1932/1964:117). However, workers lose sight of, ultimately controlling prime and to himself' (Marx, 1932/1964:117). control over, this fact instead of controlling private property; the workers are controlled by it. As with all other structural components of the controlling private property; the workers are controlled to the controlling private property; the workers are controlled to the controlling private property; the workers are controlled to the controlling private property; the workers are controlled to the controlling private property; the workers are controlled to the controlling private property; the workers are controlling private property private property private property private property private property private priva by it. As with all other structural components of Marx's work, his conception of private property was directly related to his early work. property was directly related to his early work on human potential and action as Wellas that not collected to his political goals. In relating private property work on human potential and action as well as that not collected to his political goals. to his political goals. In relating private property to his earlier work Marx made it clear that not only is private property the product of that not only is private property the product of alienated labour but, once in existence, it in turn exacerbates alienation by imposing itself. in turn exacerbates alienation by imposing itself between people and the production property as well as all realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as well as all the realize their human and the production property as all the realize their human and the production property as all the realize their human and the production property as all the realized the realized the realized the realized their human and the realized the process. If people are to realize their human potential, they must overthrow private transcendence of all the other structural companies. property as well as all the other structural components of capitalist society: 'the positive state etc. to his how family, transcendence of all estrangement—that is to say, the return of man to religion, family, state etc., to his human, i.e., social existence? Of the return of man to religion, state etc., to his human, i.e., social existence' (Marx, 1932/1964:136).

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 4. How does Marx define 'freedom'?
- 5. What do you mean by reification?
- 6. What are the two types of circulation of commodities?

CLASS CONFLICT

According to Marxism, it can be easily stated that 'class is not than to say what class is.' A collection of persons having familiar characteristics is not a class. A case in point, the proletariat cannot be labelled as a collection of people 'as against capital'. In societal setting, class is not organizational or related to a particular 'place' (a position in society which a person may possibly 'occupy' or persons might be 'interpolated', etc.). The dissimilarity is insignificant one among 'empiricist' and 'structuralist' Marxism, which treat classes as crowds of persons or as 'places'. For the desire of an extra suitable expression we shall study the analysis which takes care of classes either as crowd of people or places as the 'sociological' formation of class.

For Marxists class was considered as a societal bonding 'like capital itself' (Marx 1965, 766). A bond is neither a collection of people even when there may be bonding in a specified collection of people or a position where a group may be formed or situated. Keeping away such ideas, it can be said that class is the relation itself (like the relationship between capital and labour) more particularly, a relation of struggle.

Therefore, classes as identified bodies in social context do not take part in the conflict. In fact the basic principle of class is class struggle. Even better, 'class struggle is class itself'. (This is the way Marx established 'class' in the beginning of The Communist Manifesto.) Marx noted that 'class struggle' is fundamental to 'class' by emphasizing that survival 'for itself'—which is the conflicting survival under pressure—is fundamental to the survival of 'class' (Marx 1969, 173).

Here we will talk about the origin of class as a bonding (a bonding of conflict) as the 'Marxist' origin of class: where, in addition to, it is easier to use this term. And on the Other hand, disgracefully, the sociological origin of class comes up with the awkwardness that every person of bourgeois society is not clearly the integral part of the groups labelled 'capitalists' and 'proletarians'. The awkwardness is produced by the origin of classes as 'groups' or 'places' and to get away from this awkwardness sociological Marxism has taken refuge in labels like 'middle strata', 'middle classes' and so on and these labels are residual or consisting of the collection of people and are academic fabrications created by poor theoretical system. On the other hand, Marxist origin of class comes across no such problems, which considers class-bonding (for example, capital-labour bonding) as organizing the lives of dissimilar persons in dissimilar ways.

What type of qualitative appearances can the composition of life take as a result of capital-labour bonding (which is again, a bond of conflict)? The type referred by Marx was that of 'exploitation/expropriation'. Additional varieties consist of 'inclusion/exploration'. exclusion' (Foucault), along with 'incorporation/refusal', 'appropriation/expenditure' in additional additiona addition to 'homogeneity/heterogeneity' (Bataille) and (Marcuse, Tronti). The listing is phenomenologically' long and indefinite.

There is a disparity among the Marxists and sociological analysis. As shown previously, Marxist observes the 'pure' labour (positioned at the farthest left-hand region), whose societal position (every one of dissimilar 'intermediate' forms) is not in any way at odds and in opposition to him, and he is by no means 'methodologically' advantaged; nor the 'pure' industrialist . Together they somewhat are viewed merely as forms fused together with each other in differently arranged multitude. Alternatively, the sociological observation takes care of the 'pure' labour in addition to the 'pure' industrialist like 'methodological pillars' suspended among the network of transitional classes.

According to Marx, this dissimilarity is significant as the 'pure' worker or labour does not exist. This is not for the reason of comparative reduction of the size of the 'traditional working class' (even if the particular hypothetically imagined collection of people is distinct). In fact, the opposite is true as the income bonding is a 'bourgeois and mystifying form' (Marx 1965 Part VI). And whosoever stays within its parameter, even and particularly the industrialist, who is a manufacturer of 'surplus value', lives a life separated with himself. His roots stay caught up in exploiting the labour while he dreams of idealist 'bourgeois' reality. Therefore, the series of class conflict goes all the way there is no awkwardness in concerning the particular methods in which capital-labour pristine form reduces the sociological origin of the class and brings it to the lowest level.

An additional marked divergence among the both formats of the Marxist view which states about a single class bonding (specifically, the capital-worker bonding) occurring in the present social order but the sociological proposal recognize numerous associations equal to the number of probable connections among societal space of collection of people. On this basis, the 'sociologists' lay blame on the 'Marxists' of decreasing societal divisions. In fact, sociologists have to be blamed of the charge of no remnants in single or otherwise extra particular crowds or situations: a 'cross sociologists.

The basis of sociologists' increase of societal divisions into various levels like 'middle class' 'new petty bourgeoisies', and so on is to search a clearly consigned slot for every person. Therefore, there exist specifically the patterns in which the expressions of class and the persons are alienated among themselves—the numerical complexity of the pattern system in which the 'geological fracture-line' of the conflict of class is present throughout is not just among person but casts.

An associated position of Marxist origin is—different from that of sociologists responsibilities. Since his earliest work 'On the Jewish Question' and beyond, as 'alienated' and not liberated. Far from marking the classification of responsibilities is acquired the individual conflict results in not merely as the 'universal' (attitude of responsibilities) proportion of individualism participation. Neither theoretically nor practically definitely 'man' or 'woman' or 'citizen') symbolizes the explanation of Marx; which 'class' within its descriptions is proposed to solve

While among the Marxist and the sociological origins of class, again one more spot of dissimilarity is, naturally, political. The sociological outlook promotes policy of coalitions among classes and portions of class: along with it gives emphasis to the 'pure' labourer's class an advantaged—important and dominant—political character. In Marxist outlook, there is impossibility of these types of coalitions. The 'pure' labourer class (a person in a job as compared to jobless, the 'direct' manufacturers of 'surplus value' compared to the 'indirect' manufacturers, the 'proletariat' compared to the 'lumpen proletariat') does not have politically a procedural advantaged position, as these 'places' do not subsist. There is no issue of assigning to 'rising' as compared to 'declining' classes to domination of radical significance or power: these terms only make sense as soon as classes are viewed as positions or as collectivity of people. Lastly, the entire idea of forefront political party (added with its watered down variations) is reversed as the dissimilarities among 'advanced' plus 'backward' class fundamentally fade away amid the sociological origin of class.

However, classes are not collectivity of people or positions except bonds of conflict, therefore radical struggle obtains the shape of struggle among the collectivity (for all times it happens improperly and contaminatedly) which is implicitly the result of class conflict. It is not implicitly sociological as in the case, the appearance of 'pre given' classes—next to very last—interested more in already known academic and opinionated 'truth'. The issue facing the person is not on whose region however relatively, on which region (which region of class bonding) he or she is situated; and yet this concluding query is not implicitly the collective preference among the surviving positions or responsibilities. Not merely, in terms of quantity as well as in terms of quality, the characteristic feature of conflict of class is natural inconsistency. The focal point of the Marxist origin of class penetrating the question of alternatives by means of which class conflict deals with us and in this procedure forbids plea to whichever responsibility or position or collectivity of people in which (according to sociology) we are by now situated prior to whatsoever our decisive promise we want to make.

One can obtain sociological knowledge from Marx's manuscripts if there is a desire. Marx was not at all times a socialist, positively and particularly in his political works. In the 'two great camps' origin of class promoted in *Communist Manifesto*, the consequences of building the Marxist origin of class lie in outrightly sociological logic. A long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who wrote that long time before his detractors and 'revisionists' criticized, it was Marx who

The sociological origin of class, every time it needs to set up Marxist identification, forever turns into 'economic-determinist'. This is for the reason that the single 'indicator' of class link ('class' at this point being viewed again as a position or collectivity of of class link ('class' at this point being viewed again as a position or collectivity of people) is, according to Marx's work, the universal bonding to the 'means of production'. people) is, according to Marx's work, the universal bonding to the 'means of production' addition to being bonded to the 'means of production', nevertheless persons are part and addition to being bonded to the 'means of production', nevertheless persons are part and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to the of a class, and locate themselves bonded to the state and to 'ideology' and also to t

Marxism totals to a fiscal conclusion with lengthy and intricate 'deterministic' series. To assert that, as Althusser did, such a premise is no longer fiscal is like maintaining that a machine is no longer machine due to the asset of number of cogwheels its motor drives.

The whole thing is dissimilar to the Marxist origin of class. Marx's difference among class 'in itself' and 'for itself' is in use as unique, not among the ranks of society but among the sociological and the Marxist origins of class itself: if a class turns out to be as soon as it is 'for itself' subsequently political struggle by means of all its erratic consequences and growth and expenses previously put together into what sociological Marxist identify as fiscal 'base'. While sociological Marxists try to unify ranks which it presumes to be separate and on the foundation of the threshold and difficulty can rely on the cause and effect and external associations nevertheless 'structural' (Althusser) variety; Marxist Marxism travels in the reverse direction and illustrates differences contained by an opposing entirety, i.e., inside an internally and destructively associated sum total: 'The concrete is concrete because it is the concentration of many determinations, hence the unity of the diverse' (Marx 1973, 101). The totality of the class-relation which is specific to, for example, bourgeois society (the capital-labour relation) is present—wholly present, though in qualitatively different ways—in each of the individuals who form that society's moments or part. The essential thing was said long ago by the early Lukács: 'It is not the primacy of the economic motives in historical explanation that constitutes the decisive difference between Marxism and bourgeois thought, but the point of view of totality' (Lukács 1971, 27).

Alongside with 'the point of view of the totality', a completely new origin of class politics is initiated. Previously 'politics' is perceived as a separate societal rank; the confirming assessment of the survival of class 'for itself' develops into creation of a that still a forefront party is perceived to different 'bourgeois' idea. Nevertheless, the general social order, not Marx differentiates among the ranks of political state and ground where the societal collection of people in their readiness may participate. In the added terms, Marxist origin of class, 'the point of view of totality' discards specifically necessitates. On top of the Marxist perception, the classification of politics develops into disqualified from the political program; the idea of political program is itself disqualified some tentatively conventional political sphere of influence.

The already mentioned explanations do not assert to the wholeness or to the to be retold. They aspire to, somewhat, make it lucid about what the Marxist perception of class involves. As for the consideration of the assessment of this perception which appears to be productive that which enquires is the 'capital-labour relation' is the only and exclusive such bonding of conflict which, in every part of its fulfillment, constitutes or capital relation' just as for its fractions; it subsists as arbitrated all the way through the

The first and foremost sociologist and economist of the capitalist regime was Marx. He had a certain notion of that regime, of the fate it imposed upon men, and of the progression it would go through. As sociologist-economist of the system, he had the capitalist view of the sociological issues; he had no exact image of what the socialist system would be, and he repeatedly said that man cannot know the future in advance.

From 1848 until the end of his life, Marx apparently ceased to be a philosopher and became a sociologist and, more of, an economist. He had received an excellent economic education and knew the economic thinking of his time a few men did. He was, and wanted to be, an economist in the strict and precise sense of the word.

The Communist Manifesto is a propaganda pamphlet in which Marx and Engels presented some of their scientific thoughts in combined form. The vital theme is the class struggle. They maintain that all history is the history of the class struggle: free men and slaves, patricians and plebeians, barons and serfs, master artisans and journeymen. In short, the oppressors and oppressed have been in perpetual conflict with one another and have carried on a relentless struggle, at times covert, at time open. It has always ended with a revolutionary change of the whole society or with the mutual devastation of the warring classes. Human history is characterized by the struggle of human groups called 'social classes', which are characterized in the first place by an antagonism between oppressors and oppressed and in the second place by an inclination towards a polarization into two blocs. All societies having been divided into warring classes, contemporary capitalist society does not vary from those that preceded it. However, the ruling and exploiting class of contemporary society, namely the bourgeoisie, presents certain characteristics which are without precedent.

The bourgeoisie is unable to maintain its superiority without permanently revolutionizing the instruments of production. According to Marx, the bourgeoisie has developed the forces of production more in a few decades than previous societies have done in many centuries. Engaged in heartless competition, the capitalists have revolutionized the means of production. The bourgeoisie is creating a global market; it is destroying the leftovers of the feudal system and the traditional communities. But just as the forces of production which gave birth to the capitalist regime had developed in the heart of feudal society, so the forces of production which will give birth to the socialist regime are ripening in the heart of modern society.

Marx did not deny that among capitalist and proletarians there are presently various in-between groups—artisans, petite bourgeoisie, merchants and peasant landowners. However, he made two statements. First, along with the development of the capitalist regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be an inclination towards crystallization of social relations into two regime there will be a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and only two, represent the possibility for a political system and an idea of a social and

Marx regarded politics and the state as phenomena less important to what is occurring within the society itself. He presented political power as the appearance of social conflicts. Political power is the means by which the ruling class, the exploiting social conflicts. Political power is the means by which the ruling class, the exploiting class, maintains its control and its exploitation. The abolition of class contradictions must class, maintains its control and its exploitation. The abolition of class contradictions must logically entail the disappearance of politics and of the state, because politics and the state are seemingly the by-products or the expressions of social conflicts.

110

The idea is that men enter into specific relations that are independent of their will; in other words, we can follow the progress of history by analysing the structure of societies, the forces of productions and the relations of production, and not by basing our explanation on men's ways of thinking about themselves.

In every society there can be a notable economic base, or infrastructure, as it has come to be called, and the superstructure. The infrastructure consists basically of the forces and relations of production, while within the superstructure there are the legal and political institutions as well as ways of thinking, ideologies and philosophies. The instrument of the historical movement is the opposition between the forces and the relations of production. The forces of production seem to be basically a given society's capability to produce, a capability which is a function of scientific knowledge, technological equipment and the organization of combined labour. The relations of production seem to be basically distinguished by relation of property. However, relations of production need not be known with relations of property; or at any rate relations of production may contain, in addition to property relations and distribution of national income (which is itself more or less strictly determined by property relations).

Now, let us turn from these conceptual formulas to the understanding of capitalism. In capitalist society, the bourgeoisie is attached to personal ownership of the means of production and therefore to a certain all the personal ownership of the means of personal ownership of the means of the mean production and therefore to a certain allotment of national income. On the other hand, the proletariat, which constitutes the the proletariat, which constitutes the opposite pole of society and represents another association of the collectivity becomes association of the collectivity, becomes, at certain moment in history, the representative of a new social organization which will be a social organization. of a new social organization which will be more progressive than the capitalist organization.

This new organization will mark a lateral to a latera This new organization will mark a later phase of the historical process, a more development of the forces of production, a stage in the real stage in the re of the forces of production, a stage in the path of a progressive history. This dialectic of the forces and relations to production also in the the forces and relations to production also implies a theory of revolution. Revolutions are not political accidents, but the expressions of a theory of revolution. not political accidents, but the expressions of a historical necessity. Revolutions carry out crucial functions. They take place when the out crucial functions. They take place when the conditions for them are ripe.

Capitalist associations of production were first developed in the womb of feudal ty. The French Revolution occurred when the society. The French Revolution occurred when the new capitalist relations of production had achieved a certain level of maturity. And achieved a certain level of maturity. And achieved a certain level of maturity. had achieved a certain level of maturity. And, at least in this passage, Marx foresaw an analogous course for the change from capitalism. analogous course for the change from capitalism to socialism. The forces of production must be developed in the womb of capitalist as: must be developed in the womb of capitalism to socialism. The forces of production mature in the womb of the present society before the control of the present society before the control of the present society before the control of mature in the womb of the present society before the revolution which will mark the end of 'prehistory' is to take place. Mankind said M of 'prehistory' is to take place. Mankind said Marx always takes up only such problem as it can solve. Marx not only distinguished in a such problem in a such problem. as it can solve. Marx not only distinguished infrastructure and superstructure; he also opposed social reality to consciousness. It is not also that the social reality to consciousness. opposed social reality to consciousness. It is not men's consciousness that determines truth; on the contrary, it is the social reality that determines that determines that determines that determines that determines the social reality that determines that determines that determines that determines the social reality that determines that determines the social reality that determines that determines the social reality that determines truth; on the contrary, it is the social reality that determines their consciousness. It results in an overall beginning in which men's ways of the truth of in an overall beginning in which men's ways of thinking must be explained in terms of

Finally Marx outlined the stages of human history. Like Auguste Comte rentiated stages of human growth on the basis. differentiated stages of human growth on the basis of ways of thinking, so also Marx distinguished four of the distinguished four of the basis of ways of thinking, so also he had been also he differentiated stages of human growth on the basis of ways of thinking, so also Madistinguished four of these or, in his expressions of their economic regimes; and he labelled as the Asiatio the or, in his expressions of their economic regimes; and he labelled as the Asiatio the order of the expressions of their economic regimes. distinguished four of these or, in his expressions, four modes of production which he bourgeois modes of production, the feudal and the land the feudal and labelled as the Asiatic, the ancient, the feudal and the bourgeois. The ancient, feudal and mode of production is also have been realized:

The ancient, the ancient and the bourgeois. The ancient, feudal and the bourgeois ancient. bourgeois modes of production have been realized in the history of the West. The ancient of the characterized by slavery and the bourgeois and the history of the West. The ancient of the characterized by slavery and the characteriz mode of production is characterized by slavery; the feudal mode of production by characterized by slavery and the serfdom; and the bourgeois mode of production by

income earning. They form their different modes of man's exploitation by man. The bourgeois mode of production constitutes the last opposed social formation because, or rather to the level that, the socialist mode of production, i.e., the connection of producer, no longer involves man's exploitation by man or the subordination of manual labourers to a class wielding both possession of the means of production and political power.

On the other hand, the Asiatic mode of production does not seem to form a period in Western history. The Asiatic mode of production characterizes a civilization different from the West. The Asiatic mode of production does not seem to be distinguished by the subordination of slaves, serfs or wage earners to a class possessing the means of production, but by the subordination of all the workers to the State. If this understanding of the Asiatic mode of production is accurate, the social organization would be characterized not by class struggle in the Western sense of the term, but by the exploitation of the whole society by the state or the bureaucratic class. We must accept the fact that according to Marx, in view of that each society is characterized by its infrastructure or mode of production, distinguished four modes of production, or four stages in the history of the mankind, preceding to the socialist mode of production, which is situated beyond prehistory.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 7. What is the Communist Manifesto?
- 8. State the characteristics of the Asiatic mode of production.

THEORY OF REVOLUTION AND OTHER CONCEPTS

Marx knew that revolutionaries needed a new theory of history. So he took the best theory of history available, that of Hegel, and he stood it on its head. The result was a new theory of history as summarized by Marx in his preface to A Contribution to the Critique of Political Economy written in 1859. These ideas were all expressed in one of the great literary documents of the nineteenth century, The Communist Manifesto of 1948.

The manifesto declares that 'the first step in the revolution by the working class is to raise the position of ruling class, to win the battle of democracy'. The normal way for the proletariat to win the battle of democracy in a democratic state would be for the workers to form a political party, appeal to the electorate, and by ordinary electioneering method, to secure a majority in the national parliament. Political supremacy thus gained should be used to wrest, by degrees, all capital from the bourgeoisie, to centralise all instruments of production in the hands of the state, i.e., of the proletariat organised as a ruling class; and to increase the total of productive forces as rapidly as possible. This clearly shows that the process of socialising capital is bound to be gradual; capitalism cannot be destroyed in one stroke. In this gradual process, some despotic inroads on the rights of property recognised and protected in bourgeois states, as also on the conditions of bourgeois production, would have to be made. Without such inroads the mode of production cannot be revolutionised. The measures for affecting the revolution would of

NOTES

course vary from state to state according to their circumstances, but the following are laid down as essential prerequisites for a communist society:

- Abolition of property in land and application of all rents of land to public purposes.
- Progressive or graduated income tax.
- Abolition of all rights of inheritance.
- Confiscation of the property of all emigrants and rebels.
- Centralisation of credit in the hands of the state by means of national banks with state capitals and an exclusive monopoly.
- Centralisation of the means of communication and transport in the hands of
- Extension of factories and instruments of production owned by the state.
- Equal liability of all to labour. Establishments of Industrial armies especially
- Combination of agriculture with industry.
- Free education for all children in public schools.
- Abolition of all children's labour in factories in all its present forms.

These measures of social reform are to be taken only after the workers have been able to acquire control of the state through political methods. Until that happens, the workers and their sympathisers could easily support the measures adopted by nonsocialists towards ameliorating the condition of factory-workers; e.g. reducing hours of work, fixing minimum wages, factory acts, etc. Marx described the 'British Ten-Hours Act' of 1847, as a measure of great moral and economic benefit to the workers.

All this goes to show that the Manifesto contemplates a gradual though rapid transition from capitalist to the new socialist order. This transition is to be effected by the state which represents the power of the workers. It is likely that the strongly entrenched bourgeoisie may not allow the proletariat to win the battle of democracy peaceably and constitutionally and may place serious obstacles in the way of the proletarian government enacting and enforcing measures which hit it hard. Marx held that under such circumstances the workers would have to resort to organised force. The resistance of the bourgeoisie to the revolutionary proletariat which is bound to be stiff makes revolution inevitable. Marx could not find in history any instance where a major social or economic group freely abdicated in favour of its rival. On the assumption that the future will and the past, the Manifesto declares that the resemble the past, the Manifesto declares that the proletariat can achieve their ends only 'by the forcible overthrow of all existing social condition'.

Marx's programme is thus both evolutionary and revolutionary. It is evolutionary in so far as Marx held that the new socialist society would emerge gradually out of the capitalist society and as a result of the natural and progressive decay of the latter. It is evolutionary also in as the sense that he held that the workers could attain their objectives by peaceful means in countries like England, USA and possibly Holland where democratic traditions exists. In the other countries where conditions are not so favourable, fundamental, social and economic change is impossible except by class war, violence and revolution. In so far as it holds that resort to violence and revolution is necessary for superseding the present system by a new one, it is definitely revolution ary. It should be some of its remembered that it was the mission of Marx to make the working-class conscious of its miserable plight and exploitation under the capitalist system and to regard it as the inevitable

effect of the system and to tell the workers that their emancipation lay in their own hands. The programme of Marx is revolutionary in as much as it insists upon the irreconcilable antagonism between the interests of capitalist and labour and regards class war as an inexorable historic necessity. It is revolutionary also in the sense that it has 'no respect for vested interest incompatible with its ideal, and is ready to take any steps towards its goal when considerations of formal or traditional legitimacy'.

Stages

The vital place which revolution occupies in the entire process by which the bourgeois system of production is to be replaced by the socialist in which the means of production are in the control and possession of the state would be better appreciated if we remember that Marx divides it into two stages.

The first stage is marked by the political revolution wrought by the middle class. Its purpose is to destroy the political superiority of the nobility and the clergy and win political power, first for the middle class and next for the mass of people. The political revolution tends to equalise civil liberties and destroy privilege. It is not its purpose to equalise economic difference or put power in the hands of the proletariat. For this purpose another revolution, namely, the proletarian, is needed. England had the first revolution in the seventeenth century which is known as the Bloodless Revolution of 1688. The Reform Act of 1832 also brought about a similar revolution. This revolution may be peaceful, but need not be so. The other type of revolution took place in Russia in 1918. It was accompanied by violence and force. According to Marx, real socialism cannot be established unless the proletarian revolution has taken place. We may say that his method is definitely revolutionary in the sense that it involves violence and force. It must however be remembered that the violent revolution which puts the proletarian in power and which ushers a new system of production is the final phase of the continuous struggle between the two classes. According to Marx, it can take place only when the way for it has been prepared by the development of the contraction inherent in capitalism, and the existing system of production has its vitality. It is unwise to force its phase in countries where the conditions are not ripe for it.

We may therefore conclude that whatever Marx might have said about the necessity of winning the battle of democracy as a part of the proletarian revolution, the entire trend of his argument is definitely revolutionary. He was convinced of the impossibility of reforming capitalism and of the inevitability of its violent overthrow.

6.5.1 Transitional Proletarian State

The working classes cannot simply seize the available ready machinery of the existing state and set in going for their own ends. The bureaucratic and military machine erected by the bourgeois must be completely smashed, and a new order must be set up in its place. This obviously takes time. Marx, therefore, contemplated a transitional stage between the conquest of power by the proletariat and the establishment of the new social order.

He writes: "Between Capitalist and Communist society lies the period of the revolutionary transformation of the one into the other. There corresponds to this also a political transition period in which the state can be nothing but the revolutionary dictatorship of the proletariat."

Unfortunately, Marx is reticent in regard to the organisation of the proletariat state which is to replace the capitalist order. Beyond laying down that the proletariatwould organise itself as the ruling power after the capitalist state has been smashed, the Manifesto says nothing. But one thing is clear. The dictatorship of the proletariat would be as much a class organisation as the capitalist state, which it seeks to supplant; it would not be a free society and would retain certain features of the old order. It would preserve the coercive machinery of its predecessor. There are, however, two vital differences between it and the old regime. Whereas in the old capitalist state, the minority used political power to exploit and suppress the majority, in the new state it would be the majority which would expropriate the minority. In the second place, whereas the old capitalist state aimed at the maintenance of class distinctions and security of the owning class, the dictatorship of the proletariat would be as much a class organisation as the capitalist state, which it seeks to supplant; it would not be a free society and would retain certain features of the old order. It would preserve the coercive machinery of its predecessor.

In Civil War in France Marx gives us some details about the organisation of the dictatorship of the proletariat. The proletariat would set up its own centralised apparatus of force in order to complete the defeat of the capitalist class and defend the new order against attacks from enemies within and without. It would set up a totally new legislative authority, a proletarian judiciary and code of law, a new proletariat police and military force and the authority would remain with the proletarian party. In short, the bourgeois parliament, civil service, police, etc. would all be demolished and something new would take their place. What the Communists did in Soviet Russia after having wrested power was wholly in accordance with the Marxian view; they had to maintain the state organisation in order to defend themselves and preserve the new state against its enemies.

In place of the old bourgeois society, with classes and class antagonisms, we shall have an association, in which the free development of each is the condition for the free development of all. (Mazlish, p.105)

6.5.2 The Dictatorship of the Proletariat

The controversial and ambiguous concept of the dictatorship of the proletariat emerged in the writings of Marx and Engels as a result of a debate with the German Social Democrats, the Anarchists and more significantly from the practical experience of the Paris Commune of 1871. These observations had to be put together from the remarks solely made en passant and from different sources. The two major texts, however, were the Civil War in France and the Critique of the Gotha Programme.

The concept of the dictatorship of the proletariat held the key to the understanding of Marx's theory on the nature of Communist society and the role of the proletarian state. It was a concept that divided the Marxists and Leninists from the Anarchists on

The Communist Manifesto

The phrase "dictatorship of the proletariat" was not used in the Manifesto. Nor was a chinery. there any mention of the complete elimination of the state power and the state machinery.

More and Engels spoke about the "political rule of the state power and the state machinery." Marx and Engels spoke about the "political rule of the proletariat", advisingthe workers to capture the state, destroy all privileges of the old class, and prepare for eventual

We have seen above that first step in the revolution by the working class is to We have seen above the first step in the revolution by the working class is raise the proletariat to the position of the ruling class, to win the battle of

democracy.... The proletariat will use its political supremacy to wrest, by degrees, all capital from the bourgeoisie, to centralize all instruments of the production in the hands of the state, i.e. of the proletariat organized as the ruling class; and to increase the total of productive force as rapidly as possible. (Marx 1975)

Marx and Engels were convinced that the existing states, whether as instruments of class domination and oppression or rule by bureaucratic parasites on the whole society, would grow inherently strong and would remain minority states representing the interests of the small, dominating and powerful possessing class. It was only when the proletarian majority seized the state structure that the state assumed that it was powerful machinery which the proletariat had to contend with while preparing its revolution. In the later part of his life, Marx was convinced of the imperative need to destroy the state and establish the dictatorship of the proletariat. In the initial stage, bearing in the example of the French Revolution of 1789, he anticipated a seizure of the existing state machine by the revolutionary proletariat; for he believed that political centralization would assist the revolutionary progress.

The initial "capture" thesis of the state, however, yielded to the "smash" thesis subsequently. The former viewpoint was articulated in the Manifesto, where the existing state structures would be used for revolutionizing the mode of production. The "smash" thesis was articulated in response to the experience of the Parisian Communards, as evident in the Civil War in France and the Critique of the Gotha Programme. In a book review written around 1848-1849, Marx observed that the destruction of the state had only one implication for the suppression of the another Class. (Draper 1977)

In March 1850, the phrase "dictatorship of the proletariat" replaced the habitually used phrase "rule of the proletariat". Marx and Engels stressed the notion of extraordinary Power during an emergency for a limited period of time. Marx did not define, in any specific way, what the dictatorship of the proletariat entailed and what its relationship with the state was. It was "a social description, a statement of the class character of the Political power. It did not indicate a statement about the forms of government authority" (Draper 1975). But for some scholars, the concept was both a statement of the class charge. character of political power and a description of political power itself. "It is in fact the nature of political power which guarantees its class character". (Miliband 1965)

To Marx and Engels, the dictatorship of the proletariat was by the entire class, for revolution would be made by the masses themselves. In a series of articles written in News Pt. Neue Rheinische Zeitung, which were subsequently compiled under the title The Class Struggles in France (1848-1850) Marx contended that

... The declaration of the permanence of the revolution, the class dictatorship of the proletariat as the necessary transit point to the abolition of the class distinctions generally to the abolition of all relations of production on which they rest, to the abolition of all social relations that correspond to these relations of production, to the revolutionizing of all the ideas that result from

Marx wanted to get rid of the dictatorship of the bourgeoisie. He saw the need to replace it with a dictatorship of the proletariat. And he saw this form of state as a necessary transition to the abolition of all classes into a classless society. Like the dictatorship of the bourgeoisie, the dictatorship of the proletariat could assume a myriad of political forms. It could be very democratic. The dictatorship of the proletariat is in its essence the use of state power to defend the interests of the working class, the poor, and the form the formerly oppressed. It defends collective ownership of property as a right. It defends the right to a job, the right to universal health care.

In a capitalist society, the ruling class acquires surplus value as a kind of profit. Since the ruling class owns the land and the factory machinery as private property, the worker is forced to sell the labour power to the capitalist to earn their livelihood. So, in this way, the capitalist becomes the owner of not just the means of production, but also a worker's labour power which he has acquired by paying wages, to use in production, as well as the final product. Once the owner-capitalist pays a worker's wages, he owns the surplus value, in addition to the value of the worker's labour value. In a capitalist society, the surplus value is a kind of capital and the surplus value takes the form of the essence of production in capitalism. Thus, the only productive work is work which creates surplus value and all other surplus work is done away with. A capitalist may raise the amount of surplus value obtained from the workers in two ways:

- Through the absolute surplus value method: by making the working day as long as
- Through the relative surplus value method: by reducing wages.

A capitalist may try to increase profits by bringing in new techniques or new machinery which would help speed up production. However, these techniques become useless as soon the new techniques are copied by their competitors. The final outcome of these enhancements in production may be to increase the productivity of labour, but if the rate of surplus value is not increased simultaneously, the rate of profit will actually decrease.

Different Kinds of Surplus Value

Marx says that a thing has two different kinds of Surplus Value:

- Use-value
- Exchange-value

A person wants to buy bread, butter and cloth because of the use-value these things have for him. The use-value differs from man to man. While wine and meat have great use-value for some persons it has none at all for others. At one time cloth may have more use-value than bread while at other times it has less value for the same individual. The exchange-value of a commodity is generally expressed in terms of price, and is usually the same for all persons at a given time. According to Marx, it is determined by the process of exchange. If the supply of a community, and its amount is determined by the process of exchange. If the supply of a commodity is limited and the demand for it is oreat its exchange-value rises. The difference between the demand for it is great, its exchange-value rises. The difference between it and the demand a useful labour needed to produce it represents the socially instead by useful labour needed to produce it represents the surplus value which is appropriated by
the capitalist. Even if the demand and supply a surplus value which is appropriated by the capitalist. Even if the demand and supply of a commodity are balanced, it has a supply supply of a commodity are balanced, it has a supply of a commodity are balanced. surplus value. The position may be represented thus: a worker works for ten hours and produces a commodity. Marx held that he does not have the held that he he does not have the held that he he does not have the held that he held that he held that produces a commodity. Marx held that he does not receive wages for all the value he has created through his labour during the period. According to the Iron Law of Wages, a worker receives just the amount sufficient to a worker receives just the amount sufficient to maintain him. If we suppose that six himself hours of work each day are sufficient to maintain him. If we suppose that and his family alive, then the value produced by the worker to keep himself and his family alive, then the value produced by him during the remaining four hours represents the surplus value. It goes to his appeals the surplus value of the surplus value. represents the surplus value. It goes to his employer because the worker is working for the employer and not for himself. Marx's the the employer and not for himself. Marx's theory assumes that a worker is working more wealth than what he receives from his companies that a worker always creates more wealth than what he receives from his employers in the shape of wages. Because of the inherent viciousness of the capitalist system. of the inherent viciousness of the capitalist system which separates the worker from the tools, this difference is taken away by the capitalist who provides the tools and the raw materials.

Production of Absolute Surplus Value

With the growth of the capitalist economy production, for local consumption gave way to production for profit. Production for profit is thus an essential feature of the capitalist system. On the one hand, it required persons with enough resources to build workshop and factories and equip them with tools, machinery, etc. and on the other hand, a number of people who can be engaged to work in them because they do not own the mean of production. The workers produce things, not for themselves, but for their employer who sell them for money and thereby makes profits. According to Marx, those who can own the material means of production and employs labour to work up the raw material make profits because they appropriate what he calls 'surplus value' (it consist of the difference between the exchange value of the product created by labour and the value of 'labour power'). Marx contends that in each factory or enterprise 'the wages paid to the workers are not equivalent of the full value they produce, even very less. The rest of the value produced by the worker during his working day is taken outright by his employer'. This excess value taken by the employer constitutes the 'surplus value'. It is the constant effort of the employer to increase its amount. These extra hours will create surplus value for the capitalist. This is the central point of Marx's theory of surplus value.

Production of Relative Surplus Value

As per Marx, the additional labour time that the worker spends to earn back for the capitalist the value for which the capitalist does not pay wages to the worker is translated into surplus value. The rate of surplus value is raised by increasing the length of the Working day in order to extract surplus-labour on top of the specific amount of required labour. Conversely, surplus value can also be increased by cutting down the necessary labour time for a given day, which would mean that the value of the labor power would also fall. The surplus value derived from this method is known as relative surplus value, and is obviously different from absolute surplus value, which is an outcome of extending the working day.

Some Issues Concerning Surplus Value

It is called the theory of surplus labour and surplus value. In very simplified terms, surplus labour is profit. Things like rent, bills, wages, and other expenses are paid forthern forthrough constant and variable capital (the two forms of capital described by Adam Smith). Smith). Marx took it one step further and described surplus value. When a worker spends say eight hours a day expressing himself through labour, he can produce large quantities of goods which lead to profit. However, the worker does not see any benefit of his labour; his wage has already been taken into account through constant capital.

This is a second product of the second produc This inability to use, express, or see the benefit of labour leads to alienation, which causes the worker to stop seeing himself as a human being and he begins to see himself as merely an object.

It is not necessary to examine in any detail the Marxian theory of value and Surplus value which 'has rather the significance of a political and social slogan than of an economic particles and social slogan than economic particles and social slogan than economic particles and e economic truth' (Max Beer quoted by Laski in his Communism, p.102). From the point of view of of view of economists, the theory is unsound. And the assumptions on which its rests are false. It is not true that labour (by which Marx must mean wage labour, if the fact of

exploitation is to be deduced from it) is the only value producing agency. There is no doubt that without labour capital remains unproductive; it produces value only when labour is applied to it. But it is equally true that labour would remain unproductive without capital. The labour of the entrepreneur, factory-manager and other people who work with their brains is as necessary as that of the manual labourer, skilled and unskilled. Laski points out that for Marx, the economist, all effort 'Whether of manager, financier, worker by hand or brain, which is socially necessary in the production of an article, goes to make up its exchange value', but he admits that Marx, the agitator, sometimes used sentences 'which seem to make his analysis more narrow than this'. But if we include in 'the socially necessary labour' which is required to create value the contribution of the manager, the financier, etc the injustice and exploitative character of capitalism disappears and Marx 'the agitator' is left with no stick with which to beat the capitalist. In the second place, the Iron Law of Wages which he borrowed from Ricardo is not valid. The 'labour power' of a worker is not a commodity like an article of furniture or a piece of cloth whose price is determined by the cost of producing it. Speaking of the 'labour power' in this way, Marx may be said to have treated value and surplus value in a highly abstract way. In his hand they do not remain concrete things but become pure abstractions. It is possible for one to reject Marx's theory of value and yet to hold that the labourer does not get his fair share under capitalism. It is this idea which constitutes the core of

Conclusion

Marx created a theoretical system in which workers were paid based on the quantity of their labour, as well as the quality of their labour. their labour, as well as the quality of their labour. Marx also took into account social necessity and the amount of schooling a necessity and the necessity and the amount of schooling a necessity and the nec necessity and the amount of schooling a person had received when determining wages.

Criticism of Marx is often done from a very ignorant position. The complaints of nunism (or what people believe is companied by a service of the complaints communism (or what people believe is communism) is often true of capitalism. Say I am a labourer working for minimum wage in the LL. a labourer working for minimum wage in the United States. No matter how I perform my iob, I will only make minimum wage south a states. No matter how I perform my job, I will only make minimum wage, so why should I work hard? Marx recognized this fault of capitalism in the 19th century. How this fault of capitalism in the 19th century. Hence the reason behind his theory of surplus value and social necessity which would halve value and social necessity which would help encourage people to work hard so they could see the full benefit of their labour Most arrive and so they could see the full benefit of their labour. Most capitalists who fail to understand Marxism can be summed up in this statement. "A moralism can be summed up in this statement: "A moralizing philistine's favourite method is the lumping of reaction's conduct (Stalin for every large). I enin, lumping of reaction's conduct (Stalin, for example) with that of revolution (Marx, Lenin, but has Trotsky...)." What philistines fail to understand is that capitalism was (and still is, but has revived a bit, as I will describe shortly) a duice. revived a bit, as I will describe shortly) a dying system and it is thanks to bourgeois opportunists, claiming to be Marxists (Kantslay, Downstein and it is thanks to bourgeois, concipiles, opportunists, claiming to be Marxists (Kautsky, Bernstein, etc.) taking Marxist principles, and using those ideas to prop up capitalism by here. and using those ideas to prop up capitalism by being nothing more than traitors to the working class. Capitalism would have collapsed and using Marxist princip. working class. Capitalism would have collapsed years ago if not for this treacherous use

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 9. When does the exchange value rise?
- 10. Who gets the surplus value in a capitalist society?

SUMMARY 6.6

- · While Marx and Engels shared a theoretical orientation, there were many differences between the two men. Marx tended to be a highly abstract thinker, a disorderly intellectual and very oriented to his family. Engels was a practical thinker, a neat and tidy businessman.
- Many Marxists considered Dialects Materialism as the theoretical source of several types of Marxism. Marx never used this name which refers to the societal and economic transformation born of the material forces. Usually it is seen as the mix of Historical materialism (or the 'materialist conception of history') a name specified to Marx style in the study of society, economics and history.
- Marxism is a fundamentally materialist philosophy because the foundation of it is the belief that the overall account of everything is matter which is characteristic of reality. If empirical study is able to identify the whole aspects of matter, therefore, matter is accepted as the beginning and ending of all reality.
- The Marxist conclusion is that everything 'contains two mutually incompatible and exclusive but nevertheless equally essential and indispensable parts or aspects'. The essential idea is that this union of opposites in natural world is the feature which makes every unit auto-dynamic in nature along with ensuring a continuous drive for movement and transformation.
- The law of negation was formed to explain this predisposition of natural world. Accordingly, Marx and Engels state that to organize to move forward or replicate a superior number, creatures are inclined in the direction of negating themselves.
- The law of transformation states that constant quantitative growth leads to changes in quality by 'leaps' in the environment, resulting in production of a totally new variety or creature. This is the way in which 'quantitative development becomes qualitative change'.
- Lenin was the foremost to provide a detailed description of dialectical materialism in Materialism and Empirio-Criticism (1908). It involves approximately three axes: (i) the 'materialist invention' of Hegelian dialectics, (ii) the historicity of moral philosophy designed to class conflict and (iii) the junction of 'laws of evolution' in physics (Helmholtz), biology (Darwin) and in political economics (Marx).
- Dialectical materialism was criticized by many Marxist academicians including Marxist thinkers like Louis Althusser or Antonio Gramsci who propounded a Marxist 'philosophy of praxis' in its place.
- Marx's thinking on this topic is rich and resists neat systematization. According to Marx, what is vital for the self-worth of human beings and the meaningfulness of their lives is the development and exercise of their essential human powers, whose focus is labour or production.
- One cause of alienation cited by Marx is the frustration or abortion of human potentialities by the capitalist division of labour. Another, perhaps even more prominent and fundamental in Marx's account, is the Alienation and Capitalism.
- The basis of all of Marx's work on social structures, and the place in which that Work is most clearly tied to his views on human potential, is in his analysis of commodities.

120

NOTES

6.7 KEY TERMS

- Dialectical materialism: Dialectical materialism (sometimes abbreviated diamat) is a philosophy of science and nature, based on the writings of Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels, and developed largely in Russia and the Soviet Union.
- Historical materialism: Historical materialism is a methodological approach to the study of human societies and their development over time that was first articulated by Karl Marx (1818-1883) as the materialist conception of history.
- Iron law of wage: A law of economics which states that the real wages always run in the long run, toward the minimum wage necessary to sustain the life of the

ANSWERS TO 'CHECK YOUR PROGRESS'

- 1. Engels deduced the three laws of dialectics with his study of Hegel's Science of
 - The rule of the harmony and disagreement of opposites
 - The rule of the course of quantitative transformations into qualitative
 - The rule of the reversal of the reversal
- 2. Lenin was the foremost to provide a detailed description of dialectical materialism in Materialism and Empirio-Criticism (1908).
- 3. The Marxist perspective postulates that the structure of society may be understood in terms of its base (the foundation) in terms of its base (the foundation) and superstructure (the external build-up).

 The base consists of the mode o The base consists of the mode of production while the superstructure is represented by its legal and political structure. by its legal and political structure, religion, morals, social practices, literature, art
- 4. Freedom for Marx requires the conscious production of people's social relations, it is something which can be achieved and relations and cannot it is something which can be achieved only in community with others, and cannot be attained by retreating into oneself or be attained by retreating into one self or be attained by attained b be attained by retreating into oneself or by the exercise of one's self-determination within the confines of a jealously quarted to exercise of one's self-determination siety does within the confines of a jealously guarded 'private domain' in which society does
- 5. Reification can be thought of as the process of coming to believe that humanly created social forms are natural universal those created social forms are natural, universal and absolute and, as a result, those social forms do in fact acquire these changes and absolute and, as a result, those social forms do in fact acquire these changes are social forms. social forms do in fact acquire these characteristics. The concept of reification implies that people believe that social and absolute and, as a result, universal and absolute and, as a result, universal and absolute and, as a result, universal and implies that people believe that social and an actual and an actual and actual act implies that people believe that social structures are beyond their control and unchangeable.
- 6. Marx discussed two types of circulation of commodities. Both represent the sum total of patterned economic relationship of the size of, the total of patterned economic relationships that are external to, and coercive of, the actor. One of these types of circulation actor. One of these types of circulation—Money-Commodities-Money (M-C)

- M)—is characteristic of capital; the other—Commodities-Money-Commodities (C-M-C)—is not.
- 7. The Communist Manifesto is a propaganda pamphlet in which Marx and Engels presented some of their scientific thoughts in combined form. The vital theme is the class struggle. They maintain that all history is the history of the class struggle: free men and slaves, patricians and plebeians, barons and serfs, master artisans and journeymen.
- 8. The Asiatic mode of production does not seem to be distinguished by the subordination of slaves, serfs or wage earners to a class possessing the means of production, but by the subordination of all the workers to the State. If this understanding of the Asiatic mode of production is accurate, the social organization would be characterized not by class struggle in the Western sense of the term, but by the exploitation of the whole society by the state or the bureaucratic class.
- 9. The exchange-value rises when the supply of a commodity is limited and the demand for it is great.
- 10. The employer or the owner receives the surplus value in a capitalist society.
- 11. Surplus value that derives from a reduction in necessary labour-time is called relative surplus value.

QUESTIONS AND EXERCISES

Short-Answer Questions

- 1. Give a brief note on the early life of Marx that shaped his overall approach in life.
- 2. State the basic elements of dialectical materialism.
- 3. State the 'Law of Transformation' in Marxist theory.
- 4. What do you mean by the Engels' law of dialectics?
- 5. Give the basic features of Asiatic mode of production.

Long-Answer Questions

- 1. Define and discuss dialectics as a philosophical perspective, including how it differs from other approaches.
- 2. Define and discuss the notion of dialectical materialism.
- 3. What is the negation of negation?
- 4. What does Marx mean by the term 'alienation' and in what sense are workers alienated?
- 5. Discuss Marx's concept of labour and its role in capitalism.
- 6. What is a 'commodity'? How does it differ from an ordinary object?

6.10 FURTHER READING

Adams, Bert N., Rosalind Ann Sydie and R.A. Sydie. 2001. Sociological Theory. California: Pine Forge Press.

Calhoun, Craig J. 2002. Classical Sociological Theory. Hoboken, NJ: Wiley-Blackwell.

NOTES

Edles, Laura and Desfor Scott Appelrouth. 2010. Sociological Theory in the Classical Era: Text and Readings. California: Pine Forge Press.

Jayapalan, J. 2001. Sociological Theory. New Delhi: Atlantic Publishers and Distributors.

Ritzer, George. 2007. Sociological Theory. New York: McGraw-Hill.

Turner, Jonathan H. 2007. Handbook of Sociological Theory. New York: Springer.

UNIT 7 VILFREDO PARETO

Structure

- 7.0 Introduction
- 7.1 Unit Objectives
- 7.2 Life of Pareto
 - 7.2.1 Pareto's Economic Concepts 7.2.2 Circulation of Elites
- 7.3 Residues and Derivations
- 7.4 Logical and Non-Logical Actions
- 7.5 Summary
- 7.6 Key Terms
- 7.7 Answers to 'Check Your Progress'
- 7.8 Questions and Exercises
- 7.9 Further Reading

7.0 INTRODUCTION

Pareto was an Italian economist and sociologist. He introduced several concepts in sociology that are used even today to explain the social movements, the structure of the society and also the societal history. His study of sociology developed the concept of Circulation of Elites which is a continuous process and is witnessed in every society.

Pareto also studied about human behaviour and the underlying factors which governed it. On the basis of his study, he further divided the human actions into logical and non-logical actions. These concepts are used even today and are helpful in studying how the society functions.

UNIT OBJECTIVES

After going through this unit, you will be able to:

- Discuss the concept of elites and their circulation
- Analyse the meaning of residues and derivations
- Describe the concept of logical actions
- Explain the functioning of non-logical actions performed by humans

7.2 LIFE OF PARETO

Vilfredo Federico Damaso Pareto (1848-1923) was an Italian engineer, economist, sociologist, philosopher and political scientist. Pareto was born in 1848 in Paris. He lived in middle. in middle class environment receiving high quality education. Pareto earned a doctor's degree c. degree from now what is called the Polytechnic University of Turin in the year 1869.

After his After his graduation, Pareto worked as a civil engineer for some years for Italian Railway Company and later for a private company. During his career as a civil engineer, he Worked as a manager for Iron Works of San Giovanni Valdarno and also as the general manager of Italian Iron Works. Pareto was a fiery liberal and most of the times attacked any form of government intervention in the free market. He showed interest in economics

Self-Instructional

Material

in his mid forties. In 1886, he became a lecturer in economics and management at the University of Florence. During his stay in Florence, he attacked the government regulators and there was much political activity that kept him busy during his stay here. In 1893, Pareto became the chairperson of Political Economy at the University of Lausanne in Switzerland. In 1906, he made the discovery of the 80-20 rule according to which 20 percent of the population owned 80 per cent of property of Italy. This discovery was later generalized into the Pareto Principle. Though Pareto maintained cordial relationships with socialists, he believed that their economic ideas were flawed. He denounced the socialist leaders and believed that they wanted to despoil the country. He also launched many anti-socialist and anti-democratic campaigns because of the growing unrest among labour in Italy. He was the first to realize that cardinal utility could be dispensed with and economic equilibrium could be achieved. He laid the foundation of micro-economics and also introduced the notion of Pareto optimality. According to this notion, a system enjoys economic satisfaction when no one could be made better off by making someone else

Pareto studied sociology holding to the fact that much of social actions were nonlogical and most person actions were designed to give spurious logic to the non-rational actions. He turned to sociology to understand why his abstract mathematical economic theories did not work out in practice and believed that one of the reasons for their failure was the intervention of social factors that were uncontrollable and unforeseen. According to Pareto, everyone is driven by certain residues and derivations from these residues. Pareto's sociology was introduced in the United States and had considerable influence on several sociologists who later developed many theories based on Pareto's findings.

7.2.1 Pareto's Economic Concepts

Pareto as an economist made several important observations and introduced concepts that built a strong foundation for micro-economics that we study today. Pareto's concepts can be used successfully in several economic calculations and observations. Some economic concepts that were conceptualized by Pareto are used currently as well.

 Pareto's principle or Pareto's law: In 1906, Pareto made an observation that twenty per cent of people owned eight per twenty per cent of people owned eight per cent of wealth. Based on this observation he created a mathematical formula that described the created a he created a mathematical formula that described the unequal distribution of wealth in his country. The 80/20 Rule or Parata's P. in his country. The 80/20 Rule or Pareto's Principle means that in anything a few (20 per cent) are vital and the many (20 per cent) are vital and the vital and the vital are vital and the vital and the vital are vital and the vital (20 per cent) are vital and the many (80 percent) are trivial. In 1940s, Dr. Joseph Juran working on a universal principle that Juran working on a universal principle that he called 'vital few and trivial many' could not make precise conclusions and mand the called 'vital few and trivial many' could not make precise conclusions and used Pareto's principle as a base to write his research and findings. The 80/20 Pulsion Pareto's principle as a base to write of his research and findings. The 80/20 Rule in Pareto's principle as a base to member of people owned 80 per cent of wealth. In June 120 Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's principle as a base to meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's principle as a base to meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in Pareto's case meant 20 per cent of Rule in R people owned 80 per cent of wealth. In Juran's initial findings, the 80/20 Rule meant that 20 per cent of defects caused 80. meant that 20 per cent of defects caused 80 per cent of problems. The 80/20 rule can be applied to almost anything. It is today. can be applied to almost anything. It is today used as an effective tool to manage efficiently. Pareto's Principle reminds anything are affective tool to manage out the same of the same efficiently. Pareto's Principle reminds one to focus on the 20 per cent matters as these 20 per cent matters produce 80 per cent matters as there is a these 20 per cent maters produce 80 per cent of the results. Currently, there is a management theory floating around December 1. management theory floating around Pareto's Principle to produce what is called Superstar Management. According to this 4. Superstar Management. According to this theory, since 20 per cent people produce 80 per cent results, the focus should be an example of the contract of the co 80 per cent results, the focus should be on managing only the 20 per cent. The theory looks and sounds flawed because it can be against the sounds flawed because it can be a sound of the theory looks and sounds flawed because it overlooks the fact that 80 per cent of the time should be spent doing what is really important.

- Pareto index: The Pareto index is a measure of inequality of income distribution. Pareto believed that in all countries and time, the distribution of income and wealth is highly skew'ed with only a few holding most of the wealth. According to him all observed societies followed a regular logarithmic pattern: log N=log A+m log x; where N is the number of people who have wealth higher than x and A and m are constants.
- Pareto's chart: Pareto chart is a type of chart that has bars as well as lines. The individual values are represented in descending order by bars and the cumulative total is represented by a line. The purpose of Pareto's chart is to view the causes of a problem in severity from largest to smallest. The chart is used to statistically demonstrate andd represent the 80/20 Rule.
- Pareto distribution: Pareto distribution is probability distribution used to describe social, scientific, actuarial and geo-physical phenomenon. It is used to mathematically realize Pareto's principle.
- Ophelimity: Cophelimity is an economic concept introduced by Pareto and is a measure of economic satisfaction. Pareto used this concept to use utility as a measure of broad based satisfaction that encompassed other dimensions as well. These included ethical, mora l, religious and political dimensions. Pareto thus used utility in econoniic calculation 18.

7.2.2 Circulation of Elites

Circulation of Elites is a theory of regime change. The theory was introduced by Pareto and is by far one of the most interesting concepts of his sociology. According to Pareto, regime change or revolution took place when one elite was replaced by another and not when mile when rulers were overthrown. Pareto believed that every individual was born with different abilities and a coording to abilities and so acquires different concepits, skills, aptitudes and attitudes. According to Pareto, classes existed in every soc iety at id so each society was heterogeneous. Pareto also believed in the account of moral. also believed that the heterogeneity in the society was achieved on the account of moral, mental, physical and cultural reasons. Het erogeneity was important in the society to maintain social balance and organization in the society. Pareto also believed that people were different people were more were different morally as well as intellectually. He believed that some people were more gifted the sound of gifted than others and those most capable in a g. roup were called the elite. Pareto defines elite as "a all and those most capable in a g. roup were called the elite. Pareto defines elite as "a class of people who had highest indice 's in their branch of activity". Examples of elite agent in of elite according to Pareto are successful business amen, professors, artists and successful writers. Pareto are successful business amen, professors, artists and successful writers. Writers. Pareto divided the elite class of people into two broad categories. These were:

- Governing elite was an individual who di rectly or indirectly played some considerable part in the government and its fun ctioning.
- Non-governing elite were the rest of individuals.

Pareto's discussion was mainly based on the governing electric pareto, governing of Circulation of Elites based on the governing elite. Ac elites were according to Pareto, governing elites wer elites were concerned with administration directly or indirectly. They played an important role in the society. The nonrole in the society and even held prestigious places and positions in the society. The non-governing of the government but governing elites did not participate in the administration or run held a position of the government but ion and how it functioned. held a position that in some manner did influence the administration and how it functioned.

Pareto enlisted the following characteristics of elites:

• The class of elite is a universal concept and a continuo ous process

- The individuals who did not belong to the governing elite or the non-governing elite were called non-elites
- The elite had to power to manipulate political power overtly or covertly
- The elite also had the power to establish his superiority over others
- The elites always tried and ensured that the non-elites did not influence the society in any manner whether economically or politically
- The non-elites respected only those elites who had a liberal outlook and approach
- The elite and non-elite members always show circulation whether upward or downward.

Pareto also believed that every society had elite groups of different kinds and since these elites were best or excellent, their number was a few. Though a minority group, the elites could influence the development and progress of the society. Pareto and non-governing elite. This meant that an individual could circulate between governing non-elite. According to Pareto, this process of replacement was continuous and could violent revolution. Pareto further explained the Circulation while the other was by in the psychological characteristics of the elites as well as that of the non-elites. According essential for keeping it in power, the elite is replaced. This replacement can be done by possesses the power and the required characteristics. On the other hand, when an elite to take control of the power.

According to Pareto, the circulation of elites can take place between different classes of elites as well. A few individuals may join the elite class from the non-elite class while elites may become non-elites as well. Pareto also stated that the number of the elite groups may decline. This can happen in either arithmetical terms or in the quality and significance of the elite group on account of the various factors. When this decline takes place, the elites cease to be elites and come down to the non-elite group. The reverse also holds true. When some members of the non-elite groups achieve excellence or acquire special powers, they tend to join one or the other elite group. Pareto also claimed the fact that the increase or decrease in the number and strength of elites as well as non-elites is a part of the society and one of the major foundations on which society runs. Pareto also observed that in a free society, the circulation of elites would be constant and free. But in a free and ideal society, the circulation of society imperfections do exist and so pareto. circulation of elites is a theory that can be society that we live in. According to Pareto, circulation of elites is a theory that can be applied in every society and that there is upward or downward circulation of elites always. However, Pareto was also of the opinion that societies with aristocracies with governing elite at the top never last. To quote Pareto, 'History is the graveyards of Aristocracy'. According to Pareto, elite class emerges, dominates, falls into decadency and is finally replaced by non-decadent elites. This process has been going on in history for generations. Mortality of aristocracy is definite according to Pareto. This is because aristocrats were involved in historic wars leading to the degeneration of aristocracy. Pareto also believed that the inheritors of aristocracy do not necessarily possess all the qualities that their forefathers had to rule. They rule because of the inherited position but may not have the required skills, knowledge, and ability to govern and thus fall in decadence and thus the kingdom or empire of the aristocrats finally falls.

According to Pareto, the governing elite are always in a state of continuous and slow transformation. During its rule, the governing elite may face some problems and violent disturbances and is replaced by a new elite group. This new elite group then resumes the process of transformation. Pareto's theory of Circulation of Elites, however, faces some criticism. The main criticism comes because of the fact that Pareto was unable to provide a method of measuring and defining superior qualities of the elite. Pareto simply assumes the fact that the qualities of the elite are superior than the non-elite which may not always be the case.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 1. What is the 80/20 rule as observed by Pareto?
- 2. What is ophelimity?
- 3. What is Pareto distribution?
- 4. When did regime change take place according to Pareto?
- 5. What is the criticism for the theory of Circulation of Elites?

7.3 RESIDUES AND DERIVATIONS

In his study of sociology, Pareto always tried to unmask non-scientific theories and belief systems. In his attempt to do so, he made a distinction between the changing elements that somehow accounted for these theories and he called these derivations while the permanent elements were called residues.

According to Pareto, most of the human behaviour was illogical. However, the humans want to believe that their behaviour is logical and do not want to accept the fact that the behaviour is governed and determined by emotions. Thus, a human being tries to give logical reasons to rationalize his thoughts and behaviours. Thus, he observed two distinct elements to reach the theory. These were the constant elements of the phenomenon under consideration and the numerous ingenious theories that humans make use of to rationalize their actions. Pareto called the former residues and the latter derivations.

In order to prove that non-logical actions are more important in the society as compared to logical actions, Pareto developed the theory of residues and derivations. To arrive at the distinction between residues and derivations, Pareto used the following method. Pareto investigated doctrines that were associated with actions. From these theories, Pareto separated the elements that corresponded to logic and science. Pareto then separated the remaining non-scientific elements into constants and variables. He called the constants as residues and variables as derivatives. According to Pareto, derivations or variables arose only when there was reasoning, justification and arguments. Pareto also believed that in the presence of these derivations, it was possible to analyse the underlying constant elements called residues. Pareto also claims the fact that an infinite number of derivations are used by humans to prove their actions to be logical but the residues remain constant. Pareto listed six residues that he believed to have remained constant throughout in the Western World. Pareto also claims that these classes of residues are closely related to human instincts and propensities. These include:

128

Self-Instructional

- Group persistence
- Ability to show sentiments through actions and outer expressions
- Power to impose power on society
- · Residue of personal integrity
- · Residue of sex

Pareto intended to show that the same set of residues could give rise to a wide variety of belief systems as well as derivations. He also claimed that men deceive themselves when they take some action on the basis of a theory that they believe in. However, the real cause of action or behaviour could be found in the underlying constancy of the residue. In most cases, the residue of personal integrity explains the behaviour of humans and the actions that they take.

Pareto has named four different classes of derivations. These include:

- Derivations of assertions include statements that are dogmatic in nature
- Derivations of authority include concepts that are held in high esteem in the
- Derivations in agreement with common principles and sentiments
- Derivations of verbal proof that rely on verbal gymnastics, metaphors, etc.

According to Pareto it was the derivation that was the actual content and formed the ideology itself.

Criticism of Residue and Derivations

Pareto's theory of residues and derivations has been subject to criticism. Pareto used the residues as drives but he never made to was the residues as drives but he never made clear the nature of the residues. Pareto was not able to say clearly whether the residue. not able to say clearly whether the residues were natural or physical forces or facts or were they a result of some socio-historical process or physical forces or facts or physical forces or facts or was were they a result of some socio-historical process. Another criticism is that Pareto was never able to describe the actual nature of residues. never able to describe the actual nature of residues and the relationships that existed between the different residues. Another critical and the relationships that existed that between the different residues. Another criticism that came from Bogardus states that the classification of the residues was vague and the relationships that came from Bogardus states that the classification of the residues was vague and that came from Bogardus states sentiments named in a different manner. Another these were just human instincts and sentiments named in a different manner. Another criticism is the fact that residues have not been defined well in the sense that these care not been defined well in the sense that these are seem to be a decorative name given to instincts. The theory is also criticised because it is a decorative name given to instincts. The theory is also criticised because it is believed that residues and derivations are not justifiable in all circumstances. According to the control of the con are not justifiable in all circumstances. According to Sorokin, derivations are just like a weather cock and these are changed according to Sorokin, derivations are just like a weather cock and these are changed according to Sorokin, derivations are just in if the underlying residue is constant. The theory is the wind direction and not same even acquise the if the underlying residue is constant. The theory also comes into criticism because the use of residues and derivations may give rise to use of residues and derivations may give rise to wrong notions sometimes.

Pareto's theory of residues and derivations is helpful in explaining social movements, tructure of the society and the history of the the structure of the society and the history of the society.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 6. How did Pareto arrive at the distinction between residues and derivations?

 7. How is the theory of residues and derivations? 7. How is the theory of residues and derivations helpful?

7.4 LOGICAL AND NON-LOGICAL ACTIONS

While studying economics, Pareto concluded that economics was limited to only a single aspect of human action: the action that was rational and logical and was followed to acquire limited resources. Pareto, however, believed that human behaviours were logical subjectively as well as objectively. According to him an action was logical if the means employed to attain the resources are objectively united and the goal is achieved objectively. Pareto was also convinced of the fact that true logical action was very rarely performed. He turned to sociology when he was convinced of the fact that human affairs were guided by non-logical and non-rational actions.

Pareto broadly divided all actions into two broad categories: personal and social. He further said that all actions or social phenomenon had two aspects: form and reality. Form is the way in which the social phenomenon presents itself to the human mind and is something subjective. Reality, on the other hand, involves the actual existence of things and is completely objective. Pareto also claimed that all personal and social actions had two parts: ends and means. Using the basic traits of actions, Pareto finally divided actions as logical actions and non-logical actions.

Pareto said that every social or personal action of humans was based on either logical actions or non-logical actions. Logical actions are the actions that are based on logic and experiment. These actions are the ones in which the means and ends are connected.

Logical Action

A logical action is the one in which the logical connection between the means and the ends exist both in the mind of the person who performs the action and the objective reality. Logical action is thus pure rational action. In a logical action, the logical connection between the means and the end must be approved by the person who performs the action and other people who have enough knowledge of the fact whether the action being performed is real or not. Thus, a logical action is both subjective and objective. Pareto said that a logical action is subjective because it is liked by certain people because of personal reasons. A logical action is objective because the end result obtained has been predicted on the basis of some observations. Thus, Pareto enlisted the following characteristics of logical actions.

- Logical actions are based on logic and experiment.
- All personal or social actions that have adjustment between means and ends are logical actions.
- Logical actions are real.
- Logical actions are objective.
- Logical action must be accepted by the actor and defined objectively.
- For logical actions, the ends and means must be scientific and justified.
- There is no place for logical actions in prejudices and imaginations.
- If logical actions are justified then there must be social sanctions behind the justificat: justification.
- For an action to be logical, there must be a logical connection between the means used and the end so attained.

· Logical actions must be rational.

NOTES

Non-Logical Actions

Non logical actions are all those human actions that do not fall in the scope of logical actions. Pareto says that since these actions are non-logical it does not mean they are illogical. Non logical actions are guided by sentiments and other non-logical factors. Non logical actions are all those actions that do not show any logical connection between the means and ends either subjectively or objectively. The non-logical actions can be divided into four categories.

- The no- no category in which the actions are not logical. There is no connection between the ends and the means and the means applied do not give any result that is logical.
- The no- yes category is the category in which the result that an action will give is not logically connected to the act performed. However, in such actions, the actor wrongly believes that the means that he has applied will give the result that he
- The yes- no category of actions does produce a logical result depending on the means applied but the actor does not have any logical connection between the
- The yes- yes category gives the logical results depending on the means applied and the ends and means are subjectively connected but the objective result does

Characteristics of non-logical actions

- Non-logical actions are basically determined by subjective factors
- Non-logical actions cannot be proved either by objective experimentation or
- Non-logical actions are guided not by reasoning but by impulses
- Non-logical actions also cannot be determined by reality
- Non-logical actions are to some degree motivated by sentiments.

Logical and non-logical actions as discussed by Pareto do come under some criticism. One of the major criticisms that this theory faces is the fact that it is very difficult to distinguish between actions and tell which action is logical and which action is nonlogical. Another criticism is that it is also difficult to distinguish between the means and the ends related with an action. Another criticism is that the number of non-logical actions is more than that of logical actions. This is because humans want to perform any action that is guided by imagination, sentiments and thinking. Also humans want to prove that non-logical actions are very logical because they think so and are somehow able to

Pareto studied actions on the basis of their relation through logic. In other words, Pareto believed that every action was based on logic and humans tried to prove every action to be logical through their actions and in their own way. In other words, humans often fail to demonstrate logical action but they always want to make their thinking appear logical. This in turn helps humans attain the desired goal which may not be achieved objectively or as was desired by the action when it was performed.

CHECK YOUR PROGRESS

- 8. What is a logical action as defined by Pareto?
- 9. What is a non-logical action according to Pareto?
- 10. What is the criticism of logical and non-logical actions?

NOTES

SUMMARY

- Pareto as a sociologist and economist gave several theories and principles that can be applied today as well to the society.
- Pareto's Law or the 80/20 Rule can be applied to anything and every action in the society. According to Pareto, the 80/20 Rule says that 20 percent of people possess 80 percent of wealth.
- This principle holds true for a wide range of activities in the present day as well. In addition to this, Pareto also gave several other economic concepts that are used today.
- Pareto developed the theory of Circulation of Elites in which he said that regime change or movement does take place in every society and is a continuous process. However, according to
- Pareto, regime change or a movement took place when one elite was replaced by another and not when rulers were overthrown.
- Pareto said that the governing elite are people who somehow affect the way the administration functions while the non-governing elite are the rest of the individuals.
- The non-governing elite though not powerful are in a position that can affect the decisions of the elite. The Circulation of Elites according to Pareto takes place between the governing and the non-governing elites.
- Pareto also developed the concept of residues and derivations. Residues according to Pareto were the constant factors that affected the way the humans behave while derivations are the underlying elements and keep changing.
- Pareto developed the concept of logical and non-logical actions to explain the behaviour of human. According to Pareto, logical actions were rational as well as based on experiment.
- But most of the actions that humans performed were non-logical and were guided
 by sentiment. by sentiments and non-logical factors.
- Pareto also concluded that the humans tried to prove that their actions were logical and helped them achieve their goals. The concepts developed by Pareto are used to study the various aspects of a society.

7.6 **KEY TERMS**

• Logical action: A logical action is the one in which the logical connection between the means and action is the one in which the logical connection between the means and the ends exist both in the mind of the person who performs the action and the objective reality.

132

• Residues: Residues are intermediary between the sentiments, we cannot know directly and the belief systems and acts that can be known and analysed.

NOTES

ANSWERS TO 'CHECK YOUR PROGRESS'

- 1. Pareto observed the fact that 20 per cent of people owned 80 per cent of wealth and mathematically described it. This later came to be known as Pareto's Rule.
- 2. Ophelimity is an economic concept that was introduced by Pareto and is a measure of economic satisfaction.
- 3. Pareto distribution is probability distribution that describes social, geo-physical, actuarial and scientific phenomenon.
- 4. According to Pareto, regime change took place when one elite was replaced by another and not when rulers were overthrown.
- 5. The criticism of theory of Circulation of Elites is that Pareto was unable to provide a method for measuring and defining the superior qualities of elites. Pareto just assumed that the elite would have superior qualities than the non-elites.
- 6. To arrive at a distinction between residues and derivations, Pareto investigated doctrines that were associated with actions. From these theories, Pareto separated the non-scientific elements into a soliced the non-scientific elements into constants and variables. The constants were called residues and the variables derivations.
- 7. The theory of residues and derivations is helpful in explaining social movements, structure of the society and the last structure of the society and the history of the society.
- 8. Logical actions are rational actions based on experiments. In these actions, the means and the ends are logically connected.
- 9. Non-logical actions are those actions that do not fall in the scope of logical actions.

 They are guided by sentiments and the scope of logical actions a logical actions. They are guided by sentiments and non-logical factors. There is also no logical connection between the ends and the connection between the ends and the means of non-logical actions.
- 10. The criticism of logical and non-logical actions comes from the fact that it is not east to distinguish which actions are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguish are least to distinguish and the least to distinguis east to distinguish which actions are logical and which are non-logical. Also it is not easy to distinguish between the not easy to distinguish between the means and the ends.

QUESTIONS AND EXERCISES

Short-Answer Questions

- 1. Write a short note on the life sketch of Pareto.
- 2. State the different characteristics of elites.
- 3. How are the different classes of residues closely related to human instincts?

 4. Write a short note on the aritic. 4. Write a short note on the criticism of residue and derivations.

Long-Answer Questions

- 1. 'Circulation of elites is a theory of regime change.' Discuss. 2. 'The circulation of elites can take place between different classes of elites as may become now in a may join the elite classes.' Discuss. well. A few individuals may join the elite class from the non-elite class while elite's may become non-elites as well.' Discuss

- 3. Analyse the concept of logical and non-logical actions.
- 4. 'Pareto studied sociology holding to the fact that much of social actions were non-logical and most person actions were designed to give spurious logic to the non-rational actions.' Analyse the statement.

NOTES

FURTHER READING

- Abel, Theodore. 1980. The Foundations of Sociological Theory. Jaipur: Rawat Publications.
- Abraham, Francis M. and John Henry Morgan. 1985. Sociological Thought. Chennai: Macmillan India.
- Aron, Raymond. 1965. Main Currents in Sociological Thought, Vol. I and II. Middlesex: Penguin Books.
- Boguardus, Emory S. 1969. The Development of Social Theory. Mumbai: Vakils, Feffa and Simons.
- Ritzer, George. 1988. Sociological Theory, Second edition. New York: McGraw-Hill.